This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

James Harper

Fry 2 f. 14

FRY COLLECTION

PRESENTED BY
THE MISSES ESTHER CATHARINE,
SUSAN MARY AND JOSEPHINE FRY
FROM THE LIBRARY OF
THE LATE JOSEPH FORREST FRY
AND SUSANNA FRY

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES:

WITH

CURIOUS and INTERESTING ANECDOTES of the moſt Noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through,

IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY AND PORTUGAL.

——Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhow Vice its own image, Virtue its own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His form and Preſſure. SHAKESPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
Printed for J. WATSON, M. PEARCE, S. LEWIS, G. LONGMAN, and W. CROWDER.

M,DCC,LXXXV.

TAYLOR INSTITUTION
UNIVERSITY
18 APR 1955
OF OXFORD
LIBRARY

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of Chryſal's new maſter. Chryſal attends his maſter's wife on a viſit to a ſuperior lady. Polite reception - - - - Page 1

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The Biſhop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbiſhop, is diverted by another dream - - - - - - 6

CHAP. III.

A diſſertation on dreaming. The dream purſued to the aſtoniſhment, and almoſt converſion of the Biſhop's lady. Her veracity in recounting ſome circumſtances relating to it. She and his lordſhip perſuade each other to dream that it is true - 12

CHAP. IV.

Hiſtory of the dreamer. She loſes her wager, which ſhe pays with pleaſure. His Lordſhip waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble inſtance of charity. Chryſal enters into the ſervice of her Grace - - 19

CHAP. V.

The Biſhop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extenſive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow proteſtants in Germany. He is ſtrangely affected at the news of the Archbiſhop's recovery. Her Grace's character - 23

CHAP. VI.

The true uſe of court favour. The biter bitten. An eaſy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The inſolence of office, in hindering an houſe to be built, inſtead of an hencoop, and ſpoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the moſt of a common. A beau Lord beaten by a bailiff, for walking the fields in an undreſs - - - - - 27

CHAP. VII.

An old viſitor to a lady. The myſtery of ſtock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honeſt Aminadab. Another viſitor. The worth of honour. The beſt ſalve for a broken character - - - 34

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old ſoldier upon her Grace. Her rage and reſentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Biſhop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad 40

CHAP. IX.

Chryſal changes his ſervice for that of an uſual attendant upon the great. The hiſtory of the unfortunate clyſter-pipe-maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble imitation of high life. Another change brings Chryſal into the poſſeſſion of a perſon of an extraordinary character. Converſation between him and a very noted perſon. Let thoſe laugh that win - - - - - 45

CHAP. X.

Chryſal's maſter ſtarts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted ballad-ſinger. The hiſtory of a famous ballad. All trades alike - - - - 52

CHAP. XI.

A venerable matron completes the company. The curtain lifted up, and ſeveral unexpected diſcoveries made. Momus plays ſucceſſively upon Doctor Hunchback, and Mother Brimſtone. After various diſaſters, the evening is concluded in character - - - - - - 56

CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a viſit to an unuſual friend. The myſtery of controverſy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. Chryſal enters into the ſervice of her Grace. Her diſappointment in her viſit to the priſon. Her Grace's character - - - - - 67

CHAP. XIII.

Hiſtory of a lady of faſhion. Deſcription of a rout. Chryſal changes his ſervice for that of a Lady of enterprize. A bold ſtroke for a huſband - - - - - 73

CHAP. XIV.

Chryſal, by a natural progreſſion, comes into the poſſeſſion of a knight of induſtry, who brings him to an horſe-race, where he has an opportunity of ſeeing a noble jockey practiſe part of the myſterious ſcience of the turf, with other common occurences 80

CHAP. XV.

Chryſal's maſter pays his court to a great perſon, who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour, and expreſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments concerning polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a regular circulation, Chryſal comes into the poſſeſſion of a miniſter

niſter of ſtate, who refuſes a friendly offer for very odd reaſons. His ſtrange notion of ſome affairs - - 83

CHAP. XVI.

Chryſal's ſentiments of his maſter's maſter, who gives a remarkable reaſon for his approbation of his miniſter's meaſures, and manner of doing buſineſs. The miniſter's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. Chryſal enters into the ſervice of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderneſs and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her ſon - - - - 90

CHAP. XVII.

Another ſcene of tenderneſs. Love and honour in the old-faſhioned romantic ſtyle. Chryſal quits the ſervice of the general, and, after ſome few common changes, enters into that of honeſt Aminadab. Concluſion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace - - - - 95

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the Hague. Political converſation between a Dutchman and a Jew. They differ in opinion. Aminadab leaves his friend Van Hogan in great diſtreſs - - 101

CHAP. XIX.

Aminadab bids adieu to her Grace, and ſails with his ſon for Africa. Chryſal remains with a Dutch banker. The principles and conſcience of a good Dutchman. Chryſal is ſent into Germany. His opinion of the Dutch - - 109

CHAP. XX.

Chryſal's remarks on military glory in his journey. Two ſtrange paſſengers taken into the boat. National prejudice and pride break out in perſons not likely to be ſuſpected for ſuch paſſions - - - - - 113

CHAP. XXI.

The hiſtory of the Bulgarian ſoldier. Chryſal is carried to his deſtined maſter - - - - 120

CHAP. XXII.

How Chryſal found his maſter employed. The grandeur and happineſs of abſolute power. His cares for the augmentation and ſupport of his revenues. His rage at the inſolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and reſolution to maintain the conſequence of his rank - - - 123

CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of ſovereignty, and conſequences of grandeur. Chryſal is ſent to market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon - 131

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the Passover in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained - - - - 134

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to public justice - - - 138

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality, properly resented, brings Chrysal into a service which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new master employed. The king of Bulgaria's reception of the humble magistrates. His appropriation of money to his own use. His reflections on the sight of Chrysal - 142

CHAP. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in disguise. The exalted pleasure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in and after the battle - 146

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. Chrysal finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger - - 151

CHAP. V.

The king sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the king's fortitude and activity of soul - - - - - - 156

CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the story of the stranger. His wife arrives, and acquits the general. The king's speech to him, and generosity to the strangers. Chrysal changes his service, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the king of Bulgaria, and the probable consequences of the war - - 160

CHAP. VII.

Chrysal arrives in Vienna, where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in England. He is sent to Peru. He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to Europe to prepare matters better - - 166

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. He ſhews the promiſing ſituation of his affairs at preſent. The conciſe method by which Spain and Portugal are to be brought into the war with England. He propoſes to his brother, to join in the general, that he may accompliſh his particular deſign - - 157

CHAP. IX.

The Jeſuit proceeds to ſhew the riſe of the war in Germany, and explains the motives of the ſeveral parties engaged in it, as alſo of the neutrality obſerved by ſome particular ſtates - 173

CHAP. X.

Concluſion of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. His ſyſtems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with ſome particular exceptions. Chryſal changes his ſervice - 178

CHAP. XI.

Chryſal propoſes a political ſcheme, that will never take place, to ſettle the peace of Germany. A ſhort view of the war between the French and Engliſh, with the motives of the former for transferring the ſeat of it into Germany. Inſidious ambition meets a juſt diſappointment - - - 181

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid ſcheme diſconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to ſatisfy Engliſh ſoldiers. The diſgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his ſovereign to a public trial. His hopes are diſappointed, and he confirms his own ruin - 189

CHAP. XIII.

Chryſal arrives in Bruſſels. The great ſource of jeſuitical influence. Anecdotes of a man of pleaſure, and a lady of faſhion. The hiſtory concluded in character - - 194

CHAP. XIV.

The confeſſor entertains Chryſal's maſter with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general conſequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place - - - - - 199

CHAP. XV.

Continued. His lordſhip's ſcheme to ſling his rival, unluckily diſappointed. A diſagreeable meeting occaſions ſtrange diſcoveries. Woman never at a loſs. Law often ſpoils ſport 204

CHAP. XVI.

Chryſal's maſter meets an old acquaintance, who relates the hiſtory of his life. Curious anecdotes of a great man - 210

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to England, where his services are rejected by the state, and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand 216

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politics, and suffers a second shipwreck in England. He that will not when he may, &c. It is often better to play a poor game than stand out. Chrysal arrives at Lisbon - 223

CHAP. XIX.

Chrysal comes, at Lisbon, into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact. Chrysal's master is at length taken up, and he changes his service - 226

CHAP. XX.

Chrysal meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest Aminadab. Adventures of his son. He enters into business at Lisbon, in which Chrysal suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded. Chrysal enters into a new service - 232

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-scene in a strange place. The history of Pheron and Ilissa - - - - - 238

CHAP. XXII.

The love-adventure continued. The inquisitor visits Pheron, and obtains his consent. He employs an English sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs - - 245

CHAP. XXIII.

The sailor goes to London, buys a ship, and returns to Lisbon, where he takes his passengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a French ship. He lands his passengers at Alexandria, returns home and marries. Chrysal quits his service - 250

CHAP. XXIV.

Chrysal arrives in London, where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion - 255

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

Some remarks on language. Character of CHRYSAL'*s new maſter.* CHRYSAL *attends his maſter's wife on a viſit to a ſuperior lady. Polite reception.*

I HAVE often been apprehenſive, that the manner in which I expreſs myſelf, may lead you into ſome miſtakes of my meaning; the ſignification of words in the language of men, being ſo unſettled, that it is ſcarce poſſible to convey a determinate ſenſe, without ſuch a periphraſis, as would take up too much time in ſo complicated ſcenes as thoſe I deſcribe; for where different, or perhaps contrary meanings are ſignified by the ſame word, how eaſy is it for a mind, prone to error, to take a wrong one?

For inſtance, the character of a *good man* may be thought to be as ſafe from miſapprehenſion, from the

 immutability

immutability of the virtues which conſtitute it, as any that can be attributed either by or to human frailty; and yet, how variouſly, how contradictorily is it applied?

On the *Royal Exchange*, he is a *good* man, who is worth ten thouſand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injuſtice he has amaſſed that ſum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, *goodneſs* aſſumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and ſupports his honour with his ſword, though he is guilty of the baſeſt breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in profeſſed violation of all laws, human and divine: while in the ſtrictneſs of truth, and propriety of expreſſion, no greater abuſe of words can be conceived, than that of proſtituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern modiſh way of ſpeaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only inſtance; they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's converſation. The horſe that wins the match, goes *damn'd* faſt; as the one that loſes goes *damn'd* ſlow. The weather in ſummer is *hell fire* hot, in winter *hell fire* cold.

Now, what ſenſe can the very *Devil* himſelf, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of ſuch contradictions? Though indeed theſe particular phraſes give him pleaſure, as they ſhew the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the very terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common converſation.

But I am not at leiſure to preſcribe rules for avoiding this confuſion, one of the moſt extenſive cauſes of human error. I ſhall only give you ſome cautions to prevent your falling into it, in reſpect of what I ſay to you.

You

You are to obſerve then, that whenever I ſpeak in the perſon of another, I always would be underſtood in the ſenſe which that perſon would be underſtood in at that time, without any farther regard to moral, or phyſical truth, or propriety of ſpeech. But when I ſpeak my own ſentiments, (which indeed, I very rarely do), I ſhall always deliver them with perſpicuity and preciſion, as far as the jargon I am obliged to uſe will allow, and would have my words taken in the ſenſe uſually given to them, in the particular ſubject I may be then ſpeaking of; as the barrenneſs of language has not been able to afford diſtinct terms to them all, but is forced to wreſt known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injuſtice of the general complaint againſt the verboſity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many) diſtinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverſe.

My new maſter was a perſon of ſome learning, and, what was of more uſe, of thorough knowledge of the world: but wanting friends and intereſt, to advance him to thoſe dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had ſolicited this place, in diſcharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry conſideration of a poor ſalary, (for as he was not in the ſecret, he had no ſhare of the ſpoils) though his circumſtances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuſe it, but to place his abilities in a more conſpicuous light, where they might take the notice of his ſuperiors.

As ſoon as he had received his ſtipend, he went home, where he found his wife dreſſed in all her beſt clothes, and expecting him with the utmoſt impatience. 'My dear (ſaid ſhe) how could you ſtay a-'broad ſo late? I have been waiting for you above 'theſe two hours, and was juſt going without ſeeing 'you.'—'So late my dear! it is ſcarcely ſix o'clock!

'But where are you going in ſuch haſte?'—'To the 'Biſhop's; the Rector of—— died of an apoplectic 'fit, as he was taking his nap after dinner this even- 'ing, and you know my intimacy with the Biſhop's 'lady entitles me to aſk any thing from her.'—'But, 'child, this is not in her power to give, and even if 'it was, it is too much for a common acquaintance 'to expect!'—'This diffidence has been your ruin! 'You are always afraid of aſking, as if there was 'ruin in being refuſed; but this is not my caſe! *Aſk 'and you ſhall have*, is my text! Now-a-days no- 'thing is got without it.'——'Yes, child, but too 'frequent or improper aſking brings contempt.'— 'The manner, the manner of aſking is the thing! 'and you cannot think I want to be taught that now, 'after having lived ſo long among the Great? Often 'have I known a requeſt, *properly* made, gain a man 'a place which he has never dream'd of! As to 'the greatneſs of this living, never mind that! the 'greater it is, the greater will be your obligation to 'the perſon who gets it for you! What money 'have you got about you? we ſhall make a *party* 'perhaps. And let me have the five hundred pound 'note; I may have occaſion for that too, to make 'a *bet*.'

'There, my dear, is the money I received to-day; 'I'll ſtep up for the note: but pray, my deareſt, take 'care what you do: It is our all! And be ſure you 'are not tempted to any thing like ſimony. It is a 'great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever 'riſing, if it is detected.'—'And the fool, that is 'detected, deſerves never to riſe. You may call a 'thing by what nonſenſical name you pleaſe; but if 'knowledge of the world were to prevent people's 'riſing in it, I do not know who would be upper- 'moſt now-a-days. Bring me the note, and leave the 'reſt to me. You ſhall know nothing of what I in- 'tend till 'tis done, and then the fault, if any, will

'be

'be all mine. Here *Jane*, ſettle the furbelows of 'my ſcarf; and, *John*, call a chair to the door di-'rectly.'—'Well, my dear, here is the note: I leave 'all to you; I do not deſire to know what you in-'tend: But, remember, my dear, this note is our 'all.'—'Never fear; the chair is come, and I muſt 'loſe no time. You will divert yourſelf with your 'children, or books, I ſuppoſe, or go to the coffee-'houſe. Perhaps I may not return till 'tis late.' '——I wiſh you ſucceſs, my dear, and pray be 'cautious.'

With theſe words the Doctor retired, but to which of the amuſements his wife mentioned I cannot ſay, for he had given me to her, who carried me away with her to the Biſhop's.

When ſhe came there, the footman anſwered that it was not his lady's *night*, and ſhe was not at home: but my miſtreſs had lived too long among the Great to take his words in their literal meaning, but putting half a crown into his hand, told him ſhe had ſome earneſt buſineſs, and muſt ſee her. The doors inſtantly flew open, his lady was at home, and my miſtreſs ſhewn up without any farther difficulty.

The Biſhop's lady was ſitting at a ſnug *party*, with three or four ſelect friends, and ſeemed not much pleaſed at the intruſion of my miſtreſs, to whom ſhe ſcarce deign'd a nod; but turning to the footman, 'I thought, *ſirrah*, (ſaid ſhe) that I was 'not to be at home this evening! I ſuppoſe I ſhall 'have all the mob of the town let in upon me.'—'Dear Madam, (replied my miſtreſs) the man is 'not to blame: He told me you were not at home; 'but having ſome very earneſt buſineſs, I made bold to 'break through your orders, but I hope for your 'pardon, when you know the cauſe of my intru-'ſion.'—'O Madam, (returned the Lady) you 'know I am always glad of your company, I only 'chide the fellow for not obeying my orders. Pray,

'be ſeated, Madam; as ſoon as the *rubber* is up I 'ſhall wait upon you.'——'Dear Madam, (added 'my miſtreſs) you need not give yourſelf that trou-'ble; now I am with you, my buſineſs can wait 'your leiſure.'

CHAP. II.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The Biſhop's dejection at the death of the Doctor, and danger of the Archbiſhop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN the rubber was finiſhed, my miſtreſs was aſked to *cut in*, one of the party being taken ſuddenly ill, which ſhe did, and ſat out the whole evening; her ſucceſs at cards keeping up her ſpirits, and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair ſhe came about; but her patroneſs had very different fortune, having loſt every rubber; and what was ſtill worſe, ſeveral *by-bets*, which ſhe made *to bring herſelf home*.

This put her into ſuch a temper, that the moment the reſt of the company were gone, ſhe turned to my miſtreſs, who ſaw them all out—'And now, pray, 'madam, may I aſk what was the great buſineſs that 'brought you here this evening? (ſaid ſhe) Unluc-'ky buſineſs it has been for me, I know; for I have 'never held a card ſince you came; but I ſhall take 'care that raſcal, who let you in, ſhall never ſerve 'me ſo again! He ſhall ſtrip and turn off, without 'his breakfaſt, the moment I am up in the morning.' '—Dear madam, (replied my miſtreſs), unabaſh'd at 'ſuch a ſalute, have patience a moment, and I hope 'to make you amends for all! Will you pleaſe to ſit 'down to one ſober party of *piquet*! You are always

'too

'too *hard* for me, yet I'll venture all my winnings, 'and perhaps what I have to say, in the mean time, 'may compenſate for my intruſion.

The lady could not imagine what ſhe meant, but the thought of ſo good a match brought her a little to her temper, and though it was near ten o'clock, ſhe ſat down to cards with as much keenneſs, as if ſix hours drudging at them had only whetted her deſire for play.

As ſoon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my miſtreſs ſays to her, 'Dear madam, that 'is right! Have you heard of the ſad accident that 'happened this evening?'—'Not I (replied the other) 'pray what is it?'——'Why poor Doctor —— was 'taken ill ſhortly after dinner, and died in his chair!' '—Aye then, I ſuppoſe, he had plumb-porridge and 'over-eat himſelf! and ſo burſt a pudding, as we ſay to 'children, Ha, ha, ha!—Ha, ha, ha!'—'But pray, 'madam, have you any faith in dreams? What do 'you think? I dreamed laſt night that I ſaw you at 'court, on ſome *great* occaſion, with juſt ſuch a dia-'mond necklace on, as the Counteſs's, which you 'had bought with five hundred pounds that you won 'from me on a *bet*; you laying, that my huſband 'would, and I that he would not, get the Doctor's 'living. Well, to be ſure, there muſt be ſomething 'more than ordinary in it; for, can you believe it? 'this very morning, I put a bank-note for five hun-'dred pounds in my pocket, here it is; though I did 'not think of the poor man's death, till I heard it as 'I came by this evening, when my dream ran ſo 'ſtrongly in my head that I could not forbear break-'ing in upon you, a rudeneſs I ſhould never have 'been guilty of on any other occaſion.'—'Dear ma-'dam, you need make no apology to me; you know 'your company is always welcome. I am always at 'home to you!'—'But, madam what do you think of 'my dream?'—'I do not know, I only wiſh it were

'to

'to prove true! For five hundred pounds could never 'come more ſeaſonably.'—'Then you muſt win it; 'for my heart is ſet upon making the *bet*, and I aſ- 'ſure you, I have ſuch a regard for you, that I 'do not even wiſh you to loſe; and that is what few 'gameſters can ſay.'—'You are a pleaſant creature! 'but as for the BET, it ſhall be upon condition 'that my Lord is not under any engagement to the 'Miniſter, or her Grace, who got him his Biſhop- 'ric. If he is diſengaged, I will lay you, and you 'ſhall loſe, my girl, if it was ten times as much, and 'there's encouragement for you to hold. The bell 'rings! Will you walk down, and take a bit of ſup- 'per? There is no body but my Lord and I; but 'do not take the leaſt notice of any thing about the 'matter, nor even ſeem to have heard of the Doctor's 'death, ſhould my Lord mention it; but muſter up 'all your ſpirits, and be as entertaining as you can, 'for I always work him up beſt, when he goes to bed 'in a good humour.'

The piquet-match being thus at an end, L was paid away to the Biſhop's Lady, whoſe winnings and expectations ſent her to her ſupper in high ſpirits, where ſhe found his Lordſhip already ſeated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the uſual complimentary expletives that uſher in every polite converſation—"Pray, my Lord, (ſays 'my new miſtreſs to her huſband) what will you eat? 'Shall I help you to a bit of this fricaſee? I be- 'lieve it is very good.'—'No, my dear, I thank 'you, (replied his Lordſhip); I have not the leaſt 'appetite:—What is it, pray?'—'Sweet-breads and 'cocks combs, (returned his lady) you uſed to like 'them, and they are very nice; or will you help 'yourſelf to a bit of that fowl before you? ſome- 'thing you muſt eat.'—'No, my dear, I am obliged 'to your care; but I do not chooſe any thing to- 'night; I am very well: We all eat too much; re- 'pletion

'pletion kills half the people of England—We eat 'too much!'—'You are going to be *hip'd*, my dear! '*John*, give your master a glass of *Madeira*; fill the 'glass! eating never hurt any one, who washed down 'his victuals with a glass of good wine. Horse-'meals, indeed, are enough to choak human crea-'tures. So! do not you find yourself better now? 'Taste this fricasee; you cannot think how good it 'is.'—'Well, you will have your way. You make 'me do as you please, things never so contrary to my 'inclination. Do you call this a fricasee? I thought 'fricasees had spice put in them. This is as insipid 'as chop'd hay! Lord deliver us from such cooks! 'The badness of servants, in general, seems to be a 'judgment on the vices of the age.'—'Well, my 'dear, taste that fowl; it looks like a good one, and 'the cook could not spoil that. Pray, Madam, shall 'I trouble you to help his Lordship to a leg and a 'wing, and a bit of the breast?'—'You give me too 'much! I shall never be able to eat all this! besides 'you know, my dear, I choose a bit of the rump,'—'Eat that first, my dear, and then you shall have the 'rump. But what has happened to make you so low-'spirited this evening?'—'O child, who can be other 'than low-spirited, when such instances of mortality 'happen before our eyes every hour? Who can tell 'but the misfortune may be his own next moment? 'There's Doctor ———, poor man, was taken off 'this evening, without a minute's warning to prepare 'for such a tremendous change, just after he had 'made an hearty dinner. Here *John*, take away my 'plate; I will not eat a bit more, nor ever sleep af-'ter dinner again.'—'And, *John*, give your master 'another bumper of *Madeira*; that was what the 'Doctor wanted: He eat a great deal, and did not 'allow himself any drink. Drink good wine, and 'never fear that eating will hurt you.'—'Ah! but 'that was not the case of his Grace of ———,

who

'who lies this moment in the agonies of death. His 'phyſicians left him two hours ago. The Lord pre-'pare us all, and give us notice of his coming. He 'did not ſtint himſelf of wine; he took his bottle 'cheerfully, good man.'—'Chearfully, did you ſay? 'you ſhould have ſaid ſottiſhly; for he has done no-'thing but drink for theſe many years paſt. He has 'run into the oppoſite extreme from the Doctor, 'drinking too much, and not eating enough to ſup-'port nature. And I hope you do not ſay he has 'gone without warning at fourſcore; he has had time 'enough to prepare. But why ſhould theſe exam-'ples affect you particularly? You do not eat like the 'Doctor, nor drink like his Grace, and are young 'enough to be ſon to the youngeſt of them; why 'then ſhould you fear their fate? Here, *John*, give 'me a pint glaſs half full of *Madeira*, and reach me 'three or four of thoſe jellies. Now, my dear, if 'you are afraid to eat or drink, ſup this with a bit 'of bread, and I will anſwer for its agreeing with 'you.'

My late miſtreſs ſat all this time at her ſupper, without being able to join in the converſation; but as ſoon as his Lordſhip's taking the jellies made a pauſe in his Lady's tenderneſs, ſhe called for a glaſs of wine, and bowing to the Biſhop, drank to him by the title of *his Grace*, very gravely.

His Lordſhip ſtared, and his Lady ſtarted, while ſhe finiſhed her glaſs without any emotion, and ſeemed quite unconſcious of having ſaid any thing unuſual or improper. This behaviour ſtill embarraſſed them more; when the lady, unable to contain her ſurpriſe, 'Dear Madam, (ſaid ſhe) what have you ſaid? or 'how came you to addreſs my Lord by that title?'—'I hope, Madam, (replied the other), I have not 'ſaid any thing improper. You really frighten me! 'I hope I have not been failing in my reſpect, or ad-'dreſſed his Lordſhip by any improper title!'—'I

'cannot

'cannot say an improper one indeed; but one that 'does not belong to him, at least as yet,' returned the lady. 'Dear madam, what do you mean? pray 'do not distress me! but you must divert yourself 'surely! It is not possible that I could fail in my re-'spect to his *Grace!*'—'Ha! ha! ha! there it is a-'gain. Fail in your respect! no! you only raised your 'respect too high. You called him his *Grace*, that's 'all.'—'And is that all? Thank heaven that I did; 'and long live his *Grace*, I say again, (said she drop-'ping on her knees, and eagerly kissing his hand), 'long live your *Grace!* There is, there must be 'truth in dreams, and infidels alone can doubt it.'

At the mention of dreams, the Bishop, who had hitherto continued to sup up his jelly, without seeming to take any notice what they were saying, could not forbear shewing some emotion; for he had the strongest faith in them, and always sanguinely defended their credit, especially since his present elevation had confirmed those of his grandmother: 'What 'dreams, pray, good madam?' said he, addressing my late mistress with a visible anxiety; 'what dreams do 'you mean? Those which were thought to have re-'spect to me are understood to be already accom-'plished.'—'Please your *Grace*, (the impulse of the 'spirit is upon me, and I cannot call you by any o-'ther title!) please your *Grace*, I say, I dreamed last 'night, as I told your Lady but just now, that I met 'her at court, on some very great occasion, as fine as 'hands could make her, (I told her this just now, be-'fore I knew one syllable of his *Grace*'s death), and 'that she came up to me smiling, and thanked me 'for the cause of her coming there, for it was I who 'had made you a great man! Now, what could this 'possibly mean, but what has happened here this mo-'ment; when, by giving you this title first, (and 'Lord knows, I did it without the least design, or 'even being sensible of it when I did it), I may in

'some

'some manner be said to have made you the great 'man it belonged to.—Let the world say what they 'will, I do believe there is truth in dreams, and I 'think mine is *out* now.'

She had run on with this rant at such a rate, that it was impossible for the Bishop to interrupt her, even had he been so inclined; but that was far from being the case; he heard her with attention, and what she said made such an impression on him, that he sat some time musing on it, after she had stopped, before he had power to speak a word.

As for his lady, she at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the scheme of the wager about the Doctor's living, and, as such, resolved to humour it, and not to interrupt his meditations; but addressing herself to the other, 'Indeed, madam, (said she), I do not know what to 'say to this affair. When you told me your dream 'just now, I made nothing of it; but this account of 'his *Grace*'s death almost staggers me. Well, if 'this succeeds, and who knows what may happen, I 'shall ever hereafter have more faith in dreams.'

CHAP. III.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the astonishment, and almost conversion of the Bishop's Lady. Her veracity in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and his Lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true.

BY this time his Lordship had considered the matter, and addressing himself to the dreamer, 'Pray, madam, (said he), what time had you this 'vision or dream? in the night or towards the morn-'ing?'—'In the morning, my Lord, (replied she),

'at

'at the concluſion of my ſecond ſleep; and indeed 'it made ſuch an impreſſion upon my mind, that I 'could not go to ſleep after; for it was not in the 'confuſion of common dreams! I ſaw every thing 'diſtinctly and regularly, as if I was in the very 'place; and particularly, your Lady appeared as 'plainly to me as ſhe ſits there, Lord bleſs us! and 'by the ſame token, ſhe was dreſſed in white damaſk, 'ſpick and ſpan new, and had the moſt beautiful 'diamond necklace on, that ever my eyes beheld; and 'charmingly ſhe looked, I thought.'

'I really do not know what to ſay to this matter, '(replied his Lordſhip with great deliberation); the 'viſions of the morning have ever been held in moſt 'repute; for then the mind has recovered from the 'fatigues of the preceding day, and is able to exert 'its abilities, and look forward into the time to come. 'There are ſome good circumſtances, I own, in this 'dream. I am glad that my wife was not dreſſed in 'colours; that would have been an ill omen; but 'white is the peculiar garment of ſucceſs; angels are 'clad in white; and in this caſe particularly, it may 'prefigure the epiſcopal lawn, as that is an emble-'matical type of the purity of the epiſcopal func-'tion; and the epiſcopal and archiepiſcopal differ only 'in degree. As for the necklace, there may be more 'in that alſo than is apprehended. Precious ſtones are 'the *inſignia* of dignity, and, in the *Jewiſh* prieſt-'hood particularly, were ſymbolical of the higheſt 'order; for none of the prieſts wore them but the 'ſupreme or high-prieſt, whoſe dignity anſwered 'nearly to that of *Primate* with us; and if ſuch far-'ther bleſſings ſhould be in the Divine will, it were 'impious and ungrateful to refuſe its favours. Per-'haps I ſpeak unintelligibly to you; but the opi-'nions of the learned muſt be delivered in their 'phraſe.'—'Pray, my Lord, proceed; I could hear

'your Lordſhip for ever; I always am the wiſer and 'the better for hearing your Lordſhip.'

'Then, as to the credit to be given to dreams, '(reſumed his Lordſhip), though the ſcepticiſm of 'theſe unhappy times may deny it, yet the piety of 'wiſer antiquity was of another opinion, of which 'numberleſs inſtances might be given out of the Ho-'ly Scriptures. And among the *Gentiles*, the great-'eſt of their poets ſays, *Onar ek Dios eſti*; that is, 'in Engliſh, *dreams proceed from* Jove; that is, from 'the ſupreme Deity, whom they erroneouſly called 'by that name. And, though the heathens were 'guilty of great ſuperſtitions in this particular of 'dreams, it was not in the credit they gave them, 'but in the methods which they uſed to procure 'them; ſuch as offering ſacrifices, and ſleeping in 'the ſkins of the victims, and many others; whereas 'the dream that comes from Heaven, comes unſought 'and unexpected, and ſhould be received with reve-'rence. And if this is ſuch, and I own it has much 'of the appearance, Thy will be done, O Lord! 'Thy ſervant ſubmits, as it is his duty.'

Greatly as they muſt have been edified by this ela-borate diſſertation, the ladies had much ado to re-frain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, eſpecially his wife, who knew not which to admire moſt, the readineſs of the thought, or the eaſe with which it was received. But the dreamer had a far-ther ſcheme in her head, to carry on which ſhe now got up to go away; and bending the knee to the Bi-ſhop, 'My Lord, (ſaid ſhe), may I beg your Lord-'ſhip's bleſſing. I hope, and am confident in that 'hope, that mine was not a common dream, from 'the impreſſion it made on my mind, which could 'not have been ſtronger, if I had actually been pre-'ſent at your Lady's kiſſing the King's hand on your 'promotion: but if my zeal has hurried me too far 'in my expreſſions of it, I rely on your goodneſs to

'forgive

'forgive my fault, which was rather an enthuſiaſm 'than a deſign; and ſo, my Lord, I beg leave to 'wiſh you a good night.'

With theſe words ſhe withdrew; and her patroneſs, wondering ſhe had not thrown her a wink, and deſirous to have a laugh with her at her huſband's credulity, went as if to ſee her to her chair; when turning with her into another room, 'That was an excellent 'thought, (ſaid ſhe), and will make our affair quite 'eaſy, if he is not engaged.'——'I do not under-'ſtand you, madam, (replied the other), pray what 'thought do you mean?'——'Why, child, that of 'the dream; what elſe ſhould I mean?'——'A 'thought, dear madam! Why, do not you think I 'was ſerious, and the dream real?'—'Not one word 'of either, I aſſure you; and I wonder at your aſk-'ing me that queſtion here, where no one is preſent 'to obſerve us.'—'Dear Madam, you have quite 'miſtaken me, I aſſure you. It is true, I can jeſt 'ſometimes; but in this, give me leave to ſay, that 'I was moſt ſerious; and what is more, that I am 'ſure the event will confirm it.'——'You aſtoniſh me, 'Madam; I declare I looked upon the whole as a 'mere *fineſſe*, to promote our ſcheme about the Doc-'tor's living, for your huſband!'——'I am ſorry, Ma-'dam, that you ſhould have ſuch an opinion of me, 'as that I could invent ſuch a ſtory on any account!' ——'Well, (as I ſaid before, though in another 'ſenſe) I know not what to make of the whole. 'But as you are ſo poſitive, and my Lord ſeems in-'clined to believe you, perhaps there may be more 'in it than I can ſee, and therefore I ſhall ſuſpend my 'opinion till I ſee the end of it. This though I pro-'miſe, that my aſſiſtance ſhall not be wanting to either 'part of the dream.'—'And I promiſe you that I 'will make good all I ſaid, particularly about the 'wager and the necklace; and ſo, Madam, I wiſh

'you a good night: I ſhall do myſelf the pleaſure to 'call and ſee how you are in the morning.'

This gave the whole affair a new face; and threw the Biſhop's Lady into a meditation as profound as his Lordſhip's. 'Can this be poſſible? (ſaid 'ſhe to herſelf) and yet, how could ſhe have the face 'to ſtand it out ſo, if it was not true? But then it 'was but a dream! Aye, but my huſband ſays, 'dreams are not to be ſlighted; and he ſhould know 'more than I, at leaſt of thoſe things that are to be 'found in books. And what if it ſhould be ſo after 'all? and that I ſhould take place of Mrs. ——, and 'and Mrs. ——, and Mrs. ——, and all the reſt of 'the Biſhops Ladies!—That would be charming! 'And I believe in my ſoul I ſhall; for I have always 'looked upon them with a contempt that ſhowed I 'ſhould be one day their ſuperior. Well, *Happy 'come lucky*, ſays the proverb; my endeavours ſhall 'not be wanting, as I promiſed Mrs. ——, whoſe 'five hundred pounds will be a pretty earneſt of the 'Archbiſhopric.'

'Having thus argued herſelf into a kind of belief of the dream, ſhe went in to his Lordſhip, whom ſhe found abſorbed in thought about the *viſion*: 'Well, 'my dear, (ſaid ſhe, ſitting down by him) what is 'your opinion of this ſtrange matter? I own it is a-'bove my comprehenſion. At firſt I imagined ſhe 'might have been only in jeſt, and have invented the 'whole ſtory merely to divert your lowneſs of ſpirits; 'but when I went out with her into the next parlour, 'and put it home to her, ſhe ſtill perſiſted in it, and 'confirmed the truth of what ſhe ſaid by ſuch 'aſſeverations, that I could not avoid believing her.'

'But, my dear, (replied his Lordſhip) ſhe ſaid 'ſhe told you her dream before ſhe came in here, or 'had heard a word of his Grace's illneſs.'—'She moſt 'certainly did, my Lord; and with other circum-'ſtances, that make the whole ſtill more ſurpriſing!

'Pray

'Pray what time did the Doctor die, my dear?'—'About half an hour after four.'—'That is moſt 'wonderful! And pray, my dear, who is to have 'his living? are you under any engagement about 'it?'—'No, child, I am not; nor have I yet deter-'mined whom to give it to. But why do you aſk 'theſe queſtions? What are they to the purpoſe of 'the dream?'—'I ſhall tell you, my Lord. You 'muſt know then, that ſhe came here about four 'o'clock, juſt as I had got up from dinner, all in the 'greateſt hurry; and with a kind of wildneſs, I do 'not know how, in her looks, told me her dream; 'but with ſome circumſtances, that I know her baſh-'fulneſs would not permit her to mention before you; 'and theſe were, that I had bought the diamond 'necklace ſhe thought I had on at court, with five 'hundred pounds which I had won from her, on a 'wager that you would give her huſband the Doctor's 'living. Now as he was not even ſick at the time of 'her telling me this, there could be no deſign in it; 'and this is what makes me take the more notice 'of the matter.'

'But are you ſure, child, that ſhe told you this ſo-'early as four o'clock?'—'Rather before it, my 'dear; and what makes me ſo poſitive about it is, 'that a little after ſhe had finiſhed her ſtory, ſhe hap-'pened to look at her watch, but it was down, and 'ſo ſhe aſked me what o'clock it was by mine, that 'ſhe might ſet by it: and I remember it wanted ex-'actly ſix minutes of four.'—'Pray let me look at 'your watch; have you not altered it ſince?'—'No, my 'dear; but why do you aſk?'—'Becauſe it is nine 'minutes faſter than mine, and it was juſt half an 'hour paſt four by his watch, as they told me, when 'he died, and his and mine were exactly together; 'ſo that the ſix minutes which your watch wanted of 'four, and the nine minutes it is faſter than mine, 'make a quarter before four, which was three quar-

'ter before he died. This is moſt wonderful! for 'there could be no deſign or art in it. This is moſt 'wonderful! But there have been many revelations 'made in dreams, even in our own times; as for in'ſtance, that in DRELINCOURT, for it could be no 'other than a dream; and that other of the great 'Duke of BUCKINGHAM's riſe, and afterwards of his 'death, as is moſt judiciouſly and faithfully repreſent'ed by the Reverend Hiſtorian *, not to mention 'many more. As to the Doctor's living, my dear, I 'make you a compliment of it; you may give it to 'whom you pleaſe: though the curate is a very learn'ed and good man, and has a large family; beſide 'that he has been recommended to me by the whole 'pariſh, whom, his long reſidence among them, 'for he has been there above thirty years, has 'made love and reſpect him as a father.'—'Then 'let them provide for him, like dutiful children.' 'What aſſurance! to pretend to dictate to you, as if 'you were not the proper judge of ſuch matters! if 'it was for no other reaſon I would not give it to him, 'to teach them their duty and diſtance another time.'

'There may be ſomething in that; I do not like 'ſuch interfering in my conduct neither; and there'fore you may give it to whom you pleaſe. And her 'huſband is a man of learning and good character 'too, who will not diſcredit any preferment; but 'take care that you do not do any thing impro'per. As to your wager, there is no harm in that; 'but even ſo, it ſhould be kept a ſecret; I muſt know 'nothing of the matter.'—'I thank you, my dear 'Lord; I ſhall be ſure to obſerve your directions; and 'the accompliſhment of this part of the dream I take 'as a happy preſage of the reſt; but you muſt not be 'wanting to yourſelf; you had better, I think, go to 'her *Grace*, and ſee what may offer to promote our 'hopes.'—'That is not a bad thought, my dear;

'but

* Echard.

'But it grows late; in the morning we shall see what 'is to be done.' Saying this, they withdrew, whither we must not follow them; for of the genial bed, with most mysterious reverence I deem.

CHAP. IV.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays with pleasure. His Lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity. CHRYSAL *enters into the service of her Grace.*

I HAVE observed your surprize and admiration at the ready presence of mind and confidence of my late mistress, who could, in a moment invent such a story, and persist in it so steadily, as not only to impose upon the Bishop's easy credulity, but even upon his wife also, who was in a manner in the secret of her design, but could not interrupt my story to satisfy it sooner, by giving you her history.

She was a distant relation to a noble Lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependent. This occasioned her being taken into his family, where she lived several years as an humble companion to his Lady. As she was handsome, his Lordship had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfashionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the strongest hatred, for fear she should inform his Lady, to whom she was not more agreeable, and upon the same account, as her observing temper had given her an opportunity of seeing much more than her Ladyship desired to have her tell.

This made her situation very unhappy in the family, and inclined her to hearken to the addresses of the

the Chaplain, to whom his Lordſhip gave a ſmall vicarage with her, as did his Lady five hundred pounds, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to ſpeak. As for herſelf, you have ſeen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the ſtate ſhe was bred in improved, or rather ſharpened into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enabled her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the Biſhop and his Lady. This affair had made ſuch an impreſſion on their minds, that they could dream of nothing elſe all night but pomp and precedence, which effectually ſecured the grant in favour of my late miſtreſs, from all danger of revocation.

They were ſcarce ſeated to breakfaſt, when word was brought them that ſhe was below; upon which ſhe was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any diſtance or reſerve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all ſides, his Lordſhip, with a look of great benevolence, aſked her for her huſband, and if he was at home; to which ſhe anſwered, that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his Lordſhip, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will be diſagreeable, I 'hope, (replied his Lordſhip), and if he is at leiſure'— 'At leiſure, my Lord! (replied ſhe in a kind of 'rapture, for a wink from the Lady had explained 'the matter to her), he is, he muſt be at leiſure: no 'buſineſs can interfere with his duty. I'll ſtep for 'him this moment.'—'You need not give yourſelf 'that trouble, madam, (returned his Lordſhip); *John*, 'do you go, and tell Mr. —— that I ſhould be glad 'to ſpeak with him; for, madam, I think I cannot 'do leſs than reward his learning, piety, and good 'life, with the *living* of the poor Doctor. It is what 'I have *long* reſolved, though I never mentioned it 'before, becauſe I would not torture him with ex-'pectations; and I give it to him now, thus early

'and

'and *unasked*, to spare his modesty, and save myself 'from the solicitations of others.'—'Long live, God 'bless your *Grace!* (said she, throwing herself at 'his feet, and embracing his knees in ecstasy), for 'so I see it will be; every thing will come *out* just 'according to my dream. I could not forbear send-'ing to the *late* Archbishop's just before I came here, 'and the porter (for I would not send a servant, for 'fear my known attachment to your Lordship should 'make it taken notice of) brought me word, *that he 'was at peace.*'—This completed the Bishop's faith, and prevented his sending to enquire, for the same delicate reason that she gave.

'I must wish you joy, madam, (said the Bishop's 'Lady), of this advance in your fortune, though I 'am almost angry that my Lord did not let me into 'the secret. I have lost some hours happiness by 'his reserve; for I always make the happiness of 'my friends my own.'—'Dear madam, I thank you; 'on my knees I thank, I pray for you both! And 'give me leave, madam, to wish you joy of his '*Lordship's* promotion, and of your just advance in 'rank, as well as of all the ornaments belonging to 'it.'—'The necklace I suppose you mean? Ha, ha, 'ha!'—'I do indeed, dear madam, and of every o-'ther happiness that can attend so elevated a station.'

Her husband now entered in the utmost agitation of spirits, between hope and fear; for he was not a stranger to his wife's scheme, (indeed he had suggested the first hint of the *bet* himself, but with an address that made her think it was her own, he spoke so distantly, for he always preserved the appearance of character, even with her); and the ladies, not thinking it proper to be present at the mysterious ceremony of the Bishop's signing the *collation*, which he did directly, to avoid giving offence, by refusing other applications, they withdrew, when my mis-

tress

neſs was paid her *bet*, with as great pleaſure, by the loſer, as ſhe felt in receiving it.

The *dream* being thus far happily accompliſhed, the ſucceſsful dreamer and her huſband went home in the higheſt joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependence, and the fears of want; while my Lord prepared to pay his duty at her *Grace's* levee, and ſee whether any thing ſhould offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he called his Lady, to receive her advice, and recollecting that he had forgot his purſe, deſired to borrow hers, in which it was; and thus I changed my ſervice once more.

When his Lordſhip entered her *Grace's* levee, and had paid his moſt humble reſpects, he found the converſation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his dioceſe, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumſtances ſo moving in the account of this misfortune, as to raiſe the compaſſion of the whole company, and particularly of her *Grace*, who ſaid, that ſhe would moſt willingly contribute to the relief of their diſtreſs, but that unluckily ſhe had not leſs than a bank note of twenty pounds about her.

All the company, *who knew the world*, underſtood her *Grace*, and dropped the ſubject; but my new maſter, who had his knowledge of *mankind* moſtly from *books*, was ſo far from taking the hint, that he thought he ſhowed his reſpect for his patroneſs, by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money ſhe wanted.

Her *Grace* was ſurpriſed, as the company were confounded, at the *ignorant inſolence* of ſuch an offer. However, as this was not an occaſion for ſhowing her reſentment, ſhe coldly told him, ſhe would trouble him for the change; and having received it, gave two guineas to the perſon who had mentioned the affair, and careleſsly threw the reſt, *among which I was*, into her

her pocket, not caring to pull out her purse, as it was full of money.

My late master, pleased with the thought of having been instrumental in so notorious a benevolence, displayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himself, (for respect to her *Grace* would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty), as did the rest of the company, who all laughed in their sleeves, to think how my master had ruined himself with her Grace by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream, to observe their looks, and he was so far from being sensible that he had done amiss, that, when her *Grace* was going to retire, he boldly stepped up to her, and begged leave to speak a word or two with her in private.

Though the assurance of this request greatly aggravated his former offence, yet she could not decently refuse such a favour to his rank, and therefore slightly nodded to him to follow her.

CHAP. V.

The Bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes her Grace his almoner to relieve his fellow Protestants in GERMANY. *He is strangely affected at the news of the Archbishop's recovery. Her Grace's character.*

THE great honour of this private audience, at first put him into some confusion; but recollecting the consequence at stake, he, after much hesitation, made a shift to tell her, that 'sensible of her '*Grace*'s great humanity and commiseration for the 'sufferings of the distressed, of which she had just 'given so noble an instance'—'Pray, my Lord, no 'compliments

'compliments (ſaid her Grace, interrupting him 'with a look and accent not very encouraging), I 'am not at preſent at leiſure for them, and if you 'have no other buſineſs'—'May it pleaſe your '*Grace* (replied the Biſhop), your virtues are above 'compliment; and I come to give you an opportu-'nity of exerting them, not ſolely to praiſe them.'—'I do not underſtand you, my Lord, and I am in ſome 'haſte.'—'I moſt humbly beg your *Grace*'s pardon; 'I ſhall not delay you long. To come then briefly 'to the purpoſe, I muſt inform your *Grace*, that out 'of the income which it has pleaſed the divine Pro-'vidence, through your *Grace*'s means, to give me, 'I have thought it my duty to lay by ſome little 'matter, to make a return with to the divine bene-'ficence, in charity to his diſtreſſed creatures. Now, 'as your *Grace*'s kind intereſt was the means through 'which this ability was conferred upon me, I have 'made bold to trouble you with the diſtribution of 'my mite.'—'Me, my Lord? You aſtoniſh me! I 'cannot comprehend you!'—'I beg your *Grace*'s in-'dulgence for a moment. You will forgive this 'boldneſs, when you know the motive——hem! '——hem!

'The ſuffering of my *Proteſtant* brethren in *Ger-'many* (I ſay brethren, for men ſhould know no di-'ſtinction but religion), their ſufferings, I ſay, in 'this calamitous time of war and rapine, when the 'ambition of princes works the ruin of their people, 'has made ſuch an impreſſion upon my heart, that I 'come to offer this ſmall matter to your *Grace*, to 'be applied to their relief, as your better knowledge 'ſhall ſee moſt proper; a trouble which I ſhould 'not have preſumed to give your *Grace*, did not I 'know that ſuch works of charity are a pleaſure to 'you; and that the better information which, in 'your high rank you muſt neceſſarily have, will 'enable you to apply it more effectually to their re-

'lief

'lief than I, in the darkneſs and ignorance of my 'humble ſtation, poſſibly can. I am almoſt aſhamed 'of the ſmallneſs of the ſum (it is but two thouſand 'pounds), but it is all that I have yet been able to 'ſave; though I hope to give a better account of 'my ſtewardſhip another time; and that I ſhall be 'found not to have buried my talent, eſpecially if it 'ſhould pleaſe the Divine Providence to raiſe me to 'an higher ſtation, and thereby put the means more 'liberally into my power.—

'I moſt humbly beg your *Grace*'s forgiveneſs of 'this intruſion on your time. I am your *Grace*'s 'moſt humble ſervant'—'Stay, my Lord (returned 'her Grace, with a look and accent ſoftened into 'the moſt engaging affability); pray do not go; I 'ſee you ſo ſeldom, except *in the crowd*, that I can-'not part with you ſo ſoon. I thank you for the 'confidence you place in me; and ſhall apply your 'charity to the beſt of my judgment. Poor people! 'they greatly want relief; and if the invincible for-'titude of the *Bulgarian* monarch does not extricate 'them ſoon, they will be entirely ruined. But 'every thing is to be hoped for from ſuch an hero.

'You are very good to conſider the diſtreſſes of 'the poor people! there are few now who think of 'any thing but themſelves; ſo their appetites are 'ſatisfied, they have no feeling for what others ſuf-'fer. But, my Lord, is there any thing that I can 'ſerve you in? You may depend upon my intereſt 'at all times.'—'I am much beholden to your '*Grace!* (replied his Lordſhip, elevated at ſuch an 'offer, and now ſecure, as he thought, of his hopes); 'I am much beholden to your *Grace!* I have had 'too much experience of your *Grace*'s goodneſs to 'doubt it. Nothing that I know of at preſent. If 'any thing ſhould happen, I ſhall be moſt grateful 'to your *Grace* for your kind remembrance. We

'are all desirous of having our power to do good 'enlarged.'—

'Yes, my Lord; all good men, like your Lord-'ship, are. It is a duty to desire so. But have you 'heard any thing of the Archbishop of ——— late-'ly?'—'Not *very* lately, please your Grace.'—'I 'believe that old man will never die. He was taken 'with a fit yesterday, and it was thought he would 'expire every moment. But he has got over it, and 'is abroad to-day as well as he has been for many 'years.'—'In-d-e-e-d!'—'What is the matter, my 'Lord? something seems to ail you.'—'A-a sud-'-den --f-aint-ness has -come -o-ver me; I -m-ust '-beg -y--our Grace--'s -p-ar-don; -I -am -y-our--'Grace--'s m-ost h-h-humble servant--;' with which words he made a bad shift to crawl out, muttering to himself—'O my money, my money! O this 'curs'd dream; my money, my money!'

Her *Grace* looked earnestly after him for a few minutes, as if lost in thought, and then bursting into a loud laughter, 'And is it so, my good lord! 'does the wind sit that way? Then I can account 'for your charity. Ha, ha, ha!—But you are dis-'appointed this time, and, I fear, will the next too, 'if you do not *bid* better. Two thousand for five 'thousand a-year! Is that your conscience? But it 'will never do.'—

I was now at the summit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curiosity tempting me take a view of my new mistress's heart, as she sat at her toilet, I found myself established there without a rival, in the most absolute authority, every passion being subservient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other instance, disputed the empire with me, being *here* my most abject slave, and encouraged for no other reason than solely to promote my interest; the mighty spirit of the immense mass of gold which my mistress

had

had accumulated, having taken entire poſſeſſion of her ſoul.

CHAP. VI.

The true uſe of court favour. The biter bitten. An eaſy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The inſolence of office, in hindering an houſe to be built, inſtead of an hen coop, and ſpoiling her Grace's dairy. How to make the moſt of a common: A beau Lord beaten by a bailiff, for walking the fields in an undreſs.

WHILE my late maſter retired to meditate on the expoſition of dreams, and to pleaſe himſelf with the virtuous reflection of ſo ſignal an act of charity, her Grace ſat down to her toilet, where I ſaw art triumph over the depredations of time, and create a beauty denied by nature.

When this ſerious work was ſo far completed that ſhe could attend to other buſineſs, one of her moſt favoured domeſtics told her, that ſhe had that very morning received an offer from a man who kept a noted beer-houſe and ſhuffle-board, for the place of tapſter to the Lord Mayor, which ſhe was ſure her Grace's intereſt would readily obtain. 'Tapſter! (anſwered her Grace) what is the value of that place? Reach me the liſt of employments, with their ſalaries and perquiſites, out of that drawer. Let me ſee: Tapſter to the Lord Mayor—aye, here it is! Well, and pray what does he offer for it?'—'A thouſand guineas, pleaſe your Grace (replied her woman), which I really think enough for it, conſidering every thing.'—'Do you indeed? But I do not. Why, it is rated to me here as worth five hundred pounds a-year; and is

'that worth no more than a thouſand guineas? does 'the fellow value his own life only at two years pur-'chaſe?'—'Five hundred pounds a-year! How can 'that be? The ſalary is no more than ſixty! There 'muſt be ſome miſtake in your return.'—'The ſa-'lary! The ſalary ſignifies nothing, it is the per-'quiſites; the perquiſites are the thing: Do you 'think any place is valued by the ſalary? The per-'quiſites of this place are very conſiderable. Let 'me ſee;—why, he buys in all the beer and gin 'himſelf, for which he can charge what price he 'pleaſes; and then his own account is taken for the 'quantity that is drunk. Aye indeed, there muſt 'be a miſtake in the return, to be ſure; but not of 'the kind you mean. The place is rated too low; 'for with ſuch opportunities it muſt be worth twice 'the ſum; and I ſhall inquire into that matter be-'fore I diſpoſe of the place. A thouſand guineas 'for ſuch a place! I wonder at the fellow's con-'ſcience, to make ſuch an offer.'—'All this is very 'true; but then there are ſome circumſtances that 'muſt be conſidered on the other hand too. You 'know the Lord Mayor's year is almoſt ended; and 'then who knows whether his ſucceſſor will continue 'all the ſervants or not. This one, it certainly is 'moſt likely he will not; for as he is a known ene-'my to gambling, and has publicly declared that he 'will put the laws in execution againſt all ſuch prac-'tices, it cannot be thought that he will permit a 'fellow who has kept an houſe that has been ſo no-'torious for it, and where ſo many men have been 'brought to the gallows, and their families to beg-'gary, to hold a place of ſuch profit under him; 'beſide, he has people of his own to provide for, 'who have ſerved his father and himſelf in ſuch a 'manner as to deſerve his confidence and regard; ſo 'that every chance (to ſpeak in his own way) is 'againſt this man, which is ſo well known that no

'body

'body elſe would bid for the thing at all; where-
'fore, if I may preſume to ſpeak my opinion, his
'offer ſhould be immediately accepted.'—'There
'may be ſomething in what you ſay; but then, if it
'was ſo very precarious a place, do you think ſome
'of his cuſtomers would not inform him of it: they
'certainly muſt know it.'—'Why, the very reaſon
'of my deſiring your Grace to cloſe with him direct-
'ly is for fear they ſhould tell him, as they undoubt-
'edly would, if they ſuſpected his intention in the
'leaſt; but he conceals it from them; for the prin-
'cipal motive of his quitting the buſineſs he is in,
'and ſeeking this place, is becauſe the greateſt part
'of his cuſtomers have got deeply into his debt,
'which he can never expect them to pay while he
'continues his buſineſs; whereas he thinks, if he
'can get this place, it will be a good excuſe for his
'calling in his money, and then the Lord Mayor's
'power will protect him from their reſentments.
'This is the true ſecret of the matter; for if it was
'not on this account, he has a much better opportu-
'nity of getting money where he is, than in any
'place.'—'Well then, be it ſo; make the beſt you
'can of it; and I care not how ſoon the fellow is
'turned out after. What is the matter? what do
'you laugh at?'—'I beg your Grace's pardon; an
'odd thought juſt came into my head; but it does
'not ſignify.'—'What is it? Come, I muſt know it.'
'Why, I am almoſt aſhamed to mention it; though
'it is but a trifle neither, as ſuch matters go now.
'Your Grace knows that my huſband has a place
'under the Lord Mayor. Now it juſt came into my
'head, that when his Lordſhip comes to wait upon
'the King to be knighted, it would be no bad joke
'if his Majeſty could be prevailed on to knight my
'huſband alſo.'—'Ha, ha, ha! And ſo madam has
'a mind to be a lady. Why, with all my heart.
'There is no great matter in it, to be ſure; and I

'ſee no reaſon why you ſhould not have that title as 'well as a chandler or ſhoemaker's wife. Indeed, 'the candidates for knighthood have run ſo very low 'of late, that a man of honour ſhould be aſhamed to 'accept of it. But that is no concern of mine: I 'get the money, and where I can do that, I care not 'if it was from Jack Ketch: let others look to that. 'Well, ſince you have taken a fancy to ſtick a fool's 'feather in your cap, tell your goodman, when he 'kneels by his maſter at the important ceremony, 'not to be too haſty to riſe, and I'll take care your 'ambition ſhall be ſatisfied; though I do not know 'what we muſt do then. Your *ladyſhip* will never 'condeſcend to put on my ſhoes, or take away the 'bed-pan; ſo that I believe I muſt look out for 'another ſervant.'—'Your Grace is pleaſed to joke; 'but you are very well convinced, that I have no 'ambition above your ſervice, and ſhall ever be 'proud to perform the meaneſt offices about you. 'Indeed, in this affair, I have more reſpect to your 'Grace's honour than to myſelf. While I wait 'upon you (and I would not give up that to be 'made a Counteſs) I am but your ſervant, let me be 'called by what title I will; but then I think it is 'not proper that you ſhould be waited on by com-'mon ſervants, like any other perſon of your *appa-'rent* rank. As you are the fountain of all honour 'and nobility, you ſhould have nobles to attend you, 'as well as knights, if I could have my wiſh. And 'it was this tenderneſs of your Grace's honour, that 'made me ſo particularly affected at what happened 'yeſterday?'—'Yeſterday! I do not underſtand 'you: What happened yeſterday?'—'Your Grace 'may remember that you were ſo kind, ſome time 'ago, as to obtain leave for me from the Lord of the 'Manor, to build a little poultry-houſe in a corner 'of yonder common field. I accordingly ſet the 'maſons at work, and liking the ſituation, thought it

'was

'was no great treſpaſs to enlarge the yard a little, 'and build a lodge, with a room or two where I 'could get my clothes waſhed, and drink a diſh of 'tea with a friend, at any time I might have a mind 'to be retired; but behold, after the wall of the 'yard was built, and the lodge raiſed as high as the 'firſt ſtory, the Bailiff of the manor happened to 'come by, and ſeeing what I intended, had the inſo-'lence to fly into a paſſion, and, ſaying it was an 'encroachment beyond the leave I had obtained, 'obliged the workmen to pull down every ſtone they 'had laid, though I myſelf, on receiving notice of it, 'went there, and told him it was by your Grace's 'order, and for your own uſe, and alleged the ex-'pence you had been at; but it was all to no pur-'poſe, for he would not leave the place till his or-'ders were executed. Nor was this all; he has had 'the aſſurance alſo to ſend me word this very morn-'ing, that he would diſtrain the cows that you deſir-'ed me to put to graze in that field, if I do not di-'rectly pay for their paſture according to the rate he 'is pleaſed to charge, which is more than I have 'been able to make of the milk, though, by your 'Grace's recommendation, I have had ſo good cuſ-'tomers for it; ſo that inſtead of the profit I ex-'pected to make for you of your dairy, your Grace 'is like to be a loſer.'—'Inſolent, unreaſonable fel-'low! Not to be content with his own extravagant 'profits, without hindering every body elſe of com-'ing in for the leaſt advantage with him: but he has 'neither ſhame nor conſcience, or elſe he would be 'ſatisfied with plundering the ponds, and ſelling the 'fiſh, and hiring out the graſs as he does, without 'putting the pariſh to the expence of fencing in the 'common, to prevent the people even from walking 'over the graſs! But I may, ſome time or another, 'find a way to be even with him. He ſtands but 'badly in his maſter's favour, who deſpiſes ſuch ava-

'rice,

'rice, and would turn him out of his place directly, 'but that unluckily he has it under his hand for 'life: however, I ſhall watch every opportunity to 'return him the compliment, that I can aſſure him. 'Let him take ſuch liberties with his equals! I'll 'have him to know that he ſhall treat me with more 'reſpect.'

'That is true. Has your Grace heard how cava-'lierly he behaved lately to the young Lord ——? 'I forget his name. The great beau that made ſuch 'a noiſe, by dangling after the gentleman's wife.'— 'I know whom you mean. No! I have heard no-'thing about him: what has been the matter?'— 'Ha! ha! ha! I do not believe I ſhall be able to 'tell it for laughing. Why, your Grace muſt know, 'that the Beau was walking one morning, in a very 'plain dreſs, acroſs the upper part of the common, 'where, happening to meet a farmer's maid, going 'to drive home her cows, he entered into chat with 'her, and prevailed upon her to quit the path, and 'walk with him into an unfrequented part of the 'field, where they ſat down under a clump of trees, 'for the ſake of a little very innocent converſation, 'to be ſure. Well, they had not been there long, 'when one of the under bailiffs, whom this inſolent 'fellow keeps to watch the graſs, ſeeing them go 'out of the road, followed them; and coming upon 'them in a very unſeaſonable minute, not only in-'terrupted their converſation, but alſo aſked the 'Lord, (whoſe quality he never ſuſpected), in an im-'perious manner, how he dared to trample the graſs? 'and threatened to take him and his whore before a 'juſtice, and have them directly ſent to Bridewell. 'This inſult aggravated the offence of his intruſion 'to ſuch an height, that the Lord in a rage bade the 'ſcoundrel inſtantly get out of his ſight, or he would 'break his head. Such words from a perſon of his 'appearance, raiſed the inſolence of office ſo high,

'that

'that the Bailiff, without any more ado, lifted his 'ſtaff, and knocked his Lordſhip down, where he 'belaboured him ſeverely, repeating the word Scoun-'drel between every blow, till the poor battered 'Beau was in a moſt doleful plight, though he had 'often told him who he was, and roared out his 'quality, with all his might; but the enraged fellow 'either did not, or pretended that he did not believe 'him.

'When he had beaten him as much as he thought 'he could, without danger of the gallows, he drag-'ged him along to the highway, where fortunately 'a coach happened to come by, the owner of which 'knew his Lordſhip, and took him up, ordering his 'ſervants to apprehend the Bailiff; but he was too 'nimble for them, and made his eſcape; and now, 'finding his miſtake, and the danger into which he 'had fallen, he went directly to his maſter, and, 'telling him the ſtory in the moſt favourable man-'ner for himſelf, prevailed upon him to promiſe to 'ſtand by him; particularly as he alleged, that the 'affair had proceeded from his great care of his 'maſter's graſs, which could never be kept, if he 'ſhould be let to ſuffer for defending it.

'In the mean time, the poor Lord was in ſo very 'bad a taking, that all the phyſicians and ſurgeons 'in town were gathered about him, by whoſe aſſiſt-'ance he was confined to his bed for near a week. 'As ſoon as he was permitted to ſpeak, and ſee his 'friends, he ſent directly to the head Bailiff, to let 'him know how his man had uſed him; but all the 'ſatisfaction he could obtain, even when he went 'and applied in perſon, was to have the fellow re-'moved to another part of the common; nor could 'he obtain this, till he declared that he would make 'his complaint directly to the Lord of the Manor, 'if he had not ſome redreſs. It is ſaid, he talked of 'challenging him; but he is one of the grand jury,

'of

'of the court leet, and therefore cannot be called to 'an account that way.'

CHAP. VII.

An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her Grace's kind intentions for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character.

BY this time the mysteries of the toilet were over, and my mistress's face finished for the day, when a person entered to her, whose appearance was far from promising such an intimacy with a person of her rank.

The most shabby, squalid dress covered a distorted carcase, not much above four feet high, but so gross, that, laid upon his back, he would have cast a shadow nearly as long as when he stood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline nose, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greasy curled beard, made the beauty of his face correspond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary person approached her *Grace*, without introduction or ceremony, and entering immediately upon business, told her, 'That he came to 'know if she meant to *buy in* that day, for the report 'raised in the *Alley*, by *their* express from abroad, 'had given such a stroke to the funds, that they had 'tumbled to the ground, but would most certainly 'rise again the next day, as soon as the news, which 'had arrived that morning, should be known; which 'could not be kept a secret, as the people wanted 'something to keep up their spirits among so many 'miscarriages, and divert them from making too 'close inquiries into the conduct of affairs.'

'Why I.

'Why! my honeſt friend *Aminadab!* (replied her *Grace)*, I muſt be directed in theſe matters by you. If you think there is any thing to be got by *buying in* to-day, with all my heart; though I muſt own I cannot conceive why I ſhould *ſell out* the very laſt week, to *buy in* this.'

'Ah! my lady, (returned *Aminadab)*, there is a myſtery in all buſineſs, and in none greater than ours. The *Bulgarian* King's ſucceſs laſt week raiſed people's ſpirits ſo high, that they thought the world was to be all their own, and therefore bought at any price. Now that was a time for a prudent perſon to *ſell*, as I adviſed your *Grace*; which we had no ſooner done, than inſtantly comes an expreſs, *(of our own)*, with an account that the enemy had turned upon him in their retreat, and entirely vanquiſhed the vanquiſhers.

'This news quite overthrew the ſpirits raiſed by the former, and made every one eager to ſell out at any leſs, for fear the enemy ſhould *get wings and fly over*, to take all they had. Now, as this was but a terror raiſed by ourſelves, we take the advantage of it, and ſo buy in when others are ſelling out 20 *per cent.* cheaper than we ourſelves ſold out laſt week, when the madneſs bent the other way; and may perhaps ſell again the next, when another packet ſhall ſet things right, and bring the people back to their ſenſes. For the ſenſes of the people of this country are as inconſtant as the ſea, depending entirely upon the winds that blow them news.'

'But is it really poſſible that any people can be ſuch fools?'—'O, pleaſe your *Grace*, they are only too rich! They have more money than they know what to do with; that is all.'—'Then *Aminadab*, we will eaſe them of ſome of the burden. But would it not be better to conceal this news for another day; might not that make them fall ſtill

'lower?'

'lower?'—'But, my Lady, the people want the 'good news.'—'The people may hang themſelves 'in deſpair! I care not, ſo I get money.'—'The go-'vernment though'—'What is the government to 'me. I will get all I can, and then leave them to 'themſelves, to ſink or ſwim as they will; it is all 'one to me.'—'That is true; your *Grace* ſays right; 'a people who do not know, or, at leaſt, will not 'follow their own intereſt, are not worthy any per-'ſon's care, longer than while he can make ſome-'thing of them. But we muſt reſerve that ſtroke 'for another time. This news has got into the of-'fices, and nothing there is a ſecret you know. Be-'ſides, the *panic* was too violent to laſt; it begins 'to wear off already: in another day, they would 'recover their ſenſes of themſelves. I think, there-'fore, with your *Grace*'s approbation, to *buy in* all I 'can to-day, without you had rather lay out your 'money in the ſupplies for the Proteſtants of *Ger-'many*.'—'With all my heart, if you can make as 'much of it that way as in the funds, but not other-'wiſe. I would not loſe one ſhilling for any people 'under heaven.'

'Your *Grace* has a juſt notion of the world, and 'of the value of money that governs it. Indeed, I 'muſt ſay, that the terms for theſe ſupplies are very 'unreaſonable, conſidering how ſuch things have 'been done, for ſome time paſt. It is expected that 'people ſhould bring in their money without any '*premium*, or other advantage, than what was pub-'licly calculated for at the granting them. But theſe 'œconomiſts will find themſelves miſtaken. The 'world is wiſer now-a-days, than to give up advan-'tages which they have once got poſſeſſion of. As 'to that affair, therefore, I ſhould think it better to 'let it ſtand a little longer, till the neceſſity becomes 'more urgent, and then they will be glad to come 'into our terms, if it were not that the poor people

'may

'may be ruined in the mean time; ſo that indeed I 'am at a loſs what to adviſe your *Grace* to do in ſo 'nice an affair.'

'Why, let them be ruined then: it is not my 'fault; nor is it my buſineſs to ſave them; nor will 'I part with a ſhilling to do it. Beſides, if they do 'ſuffer by the delay, thoſe who gave them this ſupply 'to prevent their ruin, may give them another to re-'pair it.'—'I cannot but admire your *Grace*'s judg-'ment in all things. You are above the fooliſh weak-'neſs of nature, and have the noble reſolution to ſee 'your own family periſh, rather than injure your own 'intereſt to relieve them. I ſhall obey your *Grace* 'in all things. I go now to *the Alley*, where buſi-'neſs will ſoon begin.'—'Do, honeſt *Aminadab*, and 'fear not; though I could not procure an eſtabliſh-'ment for your whole nation, as I would have done, 'I certainly will for your family, and that is enough 'for you. Your ſon ſhall be made a BARONET 'at leaſt; you have riches enough to ſupport the 'title.'

'Your *Grace* is very good; our people are all ſa-'tisfied of your kind intentions: But, alas, that was 'a ſevere diſappointment to us, after coſting us ſo 'much money. The children of the Lord weep o-'ver it in their Synagogues, and the daughters of '*Sion* lament it in their ſongs; but my houſhold ſhall 'rejoice in thy favour, and the labours of my life 'prove my gratitude for it.'

Honeſt *Aminadab* was no ſooner gone, than there entered an agent ſeemingly of another nature, this dealing in honours as the other did in money, but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both ultimately the ſame.

'May it pleaſe your *Grace*, (ſaid he, advancing 'with due reverence and ceremony) I come to wait 'upon you, about that place in the ———: that 'gentleman will not, indeed cannot, give one ſhil-

'ling more for it.'—'Then let the other have it; I 'will not lose five pence, much less five hundred 'pounds for him.'—'But, please your *Grace*, you 'know what grounds he has to expect it on; besides 'your promise, which cannot be well broken through, 'it was so positive.'—'My promise was only condi- 'tional (in my own intention) that he should give 'me as much as another, and in no other sense will 'I keep it. As for his grounds of expectation, I 'regard them not: let him make the most of them 'where he can.'—'Just as your *Grace* pleases; I on- 'ly took the liberty of speaking my own opinion, 'but always in submission to your's. Not but I must 'own I am apprehensive of this gentleman's resent- 'ment, though not immediately for myself, so much 'as for your *Grace*'s character, with which he may 'be provoked to make too free upon such an affair.' —'Aye! that is liberty, your boasted English liber- 'ty, to speak disrespectfully of your superiors. But 'I despise whatever he can say; nor will I give up 'my own way for fear of his impertinence.'—'Very 'right: your *Grace* is very right. It were by no 'means fit that you should: but then it is to be con- 'sidered, whether this breach of promise may not be 'attended with inconveniences that may overbalance 'the advantages, as it may make others afraid to 'deal with you another time.'—'I will venture that: 'none come to me but for their own advantage, and 'while they can find that, they will scarce stay a- 'way for punctilios. So let me hear no more of 'this, but close with the other directly.'

'Will not your *Grace* please to abate of your de- 'mand for that place in *Ireland?* I really fear you 'rate it too high.'—'Not a shilling! I will not a- 'bate a shilling! Surely I ought to know the value 'of things in IRELAND by this time! I have had 'sufficient dealings there to teach me; it has been 'my privy purse for many years.'—'But what I fear

'is,

'is, that if your *Grace* does not fix upon some one 'directly, the lord-deputy may, and that will disap-'point you; for this place has ever been immediate-'ly in his gift, and it would reflect a kind of dis-'honour on him to give it up.'——'Dishonour in-'deed! I am much concerned for his honour cer-'tainly! And as for his naming any one to con-'tradict me, I believe he will be cautious how he 'does that. The example of his predecessor will 'teach him.'——'However, if your *Grace* pleases, 'to prevent any disputes, I will wait on him, and 'tell him that you have a friend whom you design 'to recommend.'——'With all my heart; you may 'if you will. But as to the price, I will not abate 'one shilling, as I said before. Do not I know 'that places in that country are either mere pensions, 'without any thing to do, or even necessity of ever 'going there at all; or where that cannot be dis-'pensed with, from the nature of the place, that no 'learning, no abilities are requisite? If it was here 'indeed, where knowledge in a profession is abso-'lutely necessary to a place in it, there might be 'something in higgling about the price; but for a 'coward to scruple paying for being made a general, 'or a blockhead a judge, there can be nothing more 'unreasonable; and I will not hear another word a-'bout it.——But what have you done about those 'titles, which I gave you to dispose of?'—'Really 'I do not know what to say to your *Grace* about 'them: the bent of the people does not seem to in-'cline to honours of late.'——'No! I thought 'they were always as good as ready money; espe-'cially with those who have more money than sense, 'and think it easier to buy, than earn honour by 'merit. An *IRISH* title was the constant refuge of 'those sons of fortune, who, not being born in the 'rank of gentlemen, or having forfeited it by their 'villanies, were desirous of changing their names

'for

'for ſonorous titles, to hide their diſgrace, as it 'were, under a heap of honours, which in reality 'only make them the more expoſed to the view, and 'conſequently to the cenſure of the world.——But 'I find, even that imaginary ſenſe of honour is gone 'out of faſhion, and the ſhadow is in no more re-'queſt than the ſubſtance, at preſent. But ſince they 'are grown ſuch a drug, even make the moſt you 'can of them: ſell them to whoever will buy; I 'ſhall make no exceptions of perſons.'

'I ſhall certainly do the beſt I can for your *Grace*, 'though they have been ſo oddly given away of late, 'that I verily believe people are aſhamed of taking 'them, for fear of being laughed at. Rattles are 'given to children, but titles to old men, to divert 'them; to ſome, in reward for not doing *the very 'worſt* poſſibly in their power; and to others, for 'doing *nothing at all.*—But pray, has your *Grace* ſeen 'the old colonel yet? he got his commiſſion yeſter-'day; I wiſh he may mean your *Grace* fairly.'—— 'Why? ſure you do not imagine he can have the 'aſſurance to think of playing me a trick?'——'I 'do not poſitively ſay ſo: but his behaviour has 'been very myſterious.'

Juſt then, a ſervant let her *Grace* know, that the very colonel, of whom they were talking, deſired leave to wait upon her. 'I thought ſo, (ſaid ſhe,) 'ſhew him up: I thought he would not dare to trifle 'with me!'

CHAP. VIII.

The Colonel puts the old ſoldier upon her Grace. Her rage and reſentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the Biſhop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.

THE Colonel advanced to her Grace with the aſſurance

assurance of conscious virtue sparkling in his eye, though sharpened by a cast of indignation. 'I come, (said he), please your Grace, to return you my thanks for your favours: I have got my commission, and had the honour, just now, to kiss his Majesty's hand upon it; and as your recommendation was more effectual to procure me this reward, than the labours of a life, which has not been undistinguished in the service, I thought it my duty to make your Grace this acknowledgment, and to offer you any service in the power of an honest heart, and no bad hand, in return.'—'Colonel (replied her Grace) I am glad that it has been in my power to serve a man of your character, and I do not desire any *such* return.'—'I am much obliged to your Grace for your good opinion (returned he) which I hope I shall never forfeit. I thank God, my character will not disgrace your recommendation; nor shall you ever have reason to blush at the mention of my name. I have the honour to be your Grace's most humble servant.'

'But Colonel (said the gentleman, the agent, who stood by) though her Grace has no occasion for *such* a return as you offer, having no quarrels to be fought, there is a return of another nature, which you should not forget, especially as you promised it too.'—'Why look you, sir, (replied the colonel) as to that matter, it is most certain that I did something like promise some such thing, but when I have told the whole affair so honestly to her Grace, I am sure she will be above demanding it.'—'Sir, (said her grace), I do not desire to hear any thing more about it? and I must tell you that you have behaved like an old knave.'—'Say an old soldier rather, madam, (replied he with some warmth) the other is a term I am not used to.'—'A nice distinction truly, and well worthy of a man of honour (said the agent with a sneer)'—'Have a care, Sir,

'guard your expreſſions; my reſpect, my obligati-
'ons to her Grace will make me bear any thing from
'her, but I muſt be ſo free as to tell you, that I
'have not the ſame ſentiments for you.'—'What, are
'you going to make a riot in my apartments?'—'Not
'in the leaſt, madam; my reſpect for your Grace is
'a ſufficient ſecurity from that; I would only hint it
'to *that* gentleman, that he may not always have the
'protection of your Grace's preſence; that is all,
'madam.'—'You are a knaviſh old ruffian. But I ſhall
'take care that you do not come off ſo.'——'As
'your Grace pleaſes for that. By the laws of my
'country I cannot loſe my commiſſion while I do
'my duty, nor will my gracious maſter be influen-
'ced to do me wrong, though, in the multiplicity of
'greater affairs, my ſervices, my hardſhips could not
'reach his eye. But as I would not bear the impu-
'tation of any crime, much leſs, ſo black ones as
'diſhoneſty or ingratitude, you muſt give me leave
'to ſet this affair in a juſt light to your Grace now,
'eſpecially as I may never have an opportunity of
'doing myſelf that juſtice.

'Enraged almoſt to deſperation to find that thirty
'years ſervice, the merits of which were often writ-
'ten in my blood, and ſtand recorded in theſe ſcars,
'were not ſufficient to procure me the regular advan-
'ces of my rank, without a merit of another nature,
'I reſolved to quit the barren paths which I had ſo
'long purſued in vain, and try thoſe methods which
'I ſaw practiſed with ſucceſs by others; I therefore
'applied myſelf to your Grace, who ſeemed ſtruck
'with my hardſhips, and promiſed me your favour:
'referring me, for more particular information, to
'this gentleman, who would have lowered my ſenſe
'of your goodneſs, by loading it with terms, which
'were not in my power to fulfil.

'Had your Grace mentioned them to me yourſelf,
'I ſhould moſt certainly have owned my inability;

'but

'but coming from him, I looked upon them as the '*fineſſe* of his own art, which it was not unjuſtifiable 'to return with a *feint* of mine; and therefore I 'gave an equivocal acquieſcence with his propoſal, 'for he dares not ſay I made a particular or poſitive 'promiſe of any thing.

'If I have done wrong in this, I am miſtaken, and 'ſorry for it, but ſtill it is not within the article of 'war, that makes an error in judgment criminal; 'becauſe it was not againſt an enemy; but by all the 'rules of war, and that is my profeſſion, and the only 'one that I have ſtudied, it is allowable to oppoſe art 'to art, and try to foil the devil at his own weapons. 'This is what I have done; and the ſucceſs of this 'ſtratagem, which has effected by a *coup de main* 'what I had been making regular advances to, ſo 'long in vain, proves the juſtneſs of my plan, and 'muſt extort your Grace's approbation, when the 'paſſion raiſed by this gentleman's mercenary influ-'ence ſhall cool.'

Saying thus, the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my miſtreſs and her agent ſtaring at each other in the ſtrongeſt ſurpriſe.

Her Grace found utterance firſt, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent. 'So then (ſaid ſhe) after all, I find the old 'ruffian has outwitted you, with a general promiſe, 'or no promiſe at all, it ſeems, for you did not dare 'to contradict him. I thought, ſir, that I had cau-'tioned you before, againſt this very thing, and given 'you poſitive orders to take nothing but the money. 'But you ſhall pay for your neglect! you ſhall make 'good the loſs to me. As for the old ruffian, I will 'ſpeak to his general, and have him broke for a 'cheat. Talk to me of his ſervices! what are his 'ſervices to me? but I will have him broke; his 'example ſhall terrify others from attempting to ab-'uſe me ſo again.'

'I wiſh

'I wiſh it were proper or poſſible (replied her agent, as ſoon as want of breath made her ſtop) for your Grace to have him puniſhed for his inſolence; but ſuch a tongue as his might lay matters too open, if once ſet a-going; for you ſee he is not to be overawed to any thing. As for his commiſſion, there is no loſs in it; for it was ordered for him before I applied, though I made him think it was obtained by your intereſt, to try what I could bring him to. Your Grace may be aſſured, that I would not have taken any promiſe, had it been otherwiſe; and I was juſt going to tell you this, when his coming prevented me.'—'It may be ſo, (returned ſhe); but I ſhall be better ſatisfied of it, before I give up your making good the loſs.'

The agent was relieved from farther perſecution for that time, by the entrance of a *meſſenger*, who was going to *Germany*, and called to know if her Grace had any commands for her friends there. 'None but my good wiſhes and prayers for their deliverance, (replied ſhe, with a deep drawn ſigh), which are conſtantly offered up for them. I am ſorry I am not able to ſend them any relief from myſelf; but I have nothing in my power, no places, no opportunities of getting any thing. Theſe few pieces (taking about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where ſhe had thrown the Biſhop's change of her note), are all at preſent in my poſſeſſion; give them to my dear mother, with my duty, and tell her I will ſend her the clothes ſhe wrote for as ſoon as poſſible; and aſſure the reſt of my friends of my conſtant attention to their intereſt.'

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, for that of an uſual attendant upon the great. The hiſtory of the unfortunate glyſter-pipe maker, who was like to be hanged for dirtying his fingers. An humble invitation of high life. Another change brings* CHRYSAL *into the poſſeſſion of a perſon of an extraordinary character. Converſation between him and a very noted perſon. Let thoſe laugh that win.*

I WAS, by this time, ſo ſick of *High Life*, that I was very glad of being one of the number her Grace gave to the *meſſenger*, as I ſaw no proſpect of pleaſure in ſuch a ſervice. He had no ſooner received her Grace's commands, than he immediately went to the office for his diſpatches, where he was ſent on another errand, while they were getting ready.

This was to apprehend a poor wretch, who ſold glyſter-pipes about the ſtreets, but being unable to get bread in his profeſſion, had fallen upon a ſcheme, that he imagined might raiſe him to the notice of the world in the light of a ſtate criminal, and get his hunger well ſatisfied, while he ſhould be an happy priſoner, for offences which he imagined could not be attended with any bad conſequences.

Big with this project, he had entered into a correſpondence with ſome perſon abroad, of equal conſequence with himſelf, and to him communicated the *ſecret* intelligence which he daily picked up at coffee-houſes, or found in the public news-papers, which his *great* friend was to forward to ſome *great* perſon in the ſervice of the enemy.

He had long continued this trade unnoticed, as he thought, though all his letters had been opened at the poſt-office; but the ſtuff contained in them was thought below regard; ſo that he began to fear that his

his ſcheme would turn to no account. But now ſome miſcarriages in public affairs alarming the reſentment of the people, and making it evident that the ſecrets of the nation were betrayed, this inſignificant creature was thought of, and ordered to be taken into cuſtody.

Though this was the thing which he had always propoſed by his undertaking, to keep up the farce, he counterfeited the ſtrongeſt terrors, and put on every appearance of conſcious guilt, ſo far, that he had like to have overacted his part, and fallen a ſacrifice to the law, which he only meant to illude: a juſt judgment on the baſe depravity of ſoul, that could deſcend to ſo iniquitous a ſcheme, as to trifle with his ſacred duty to his country, to ſupport an anxious burthenſome being.

For his counterfeited fears not only gave weight to the appearances which were before ſo very ſtrong againſt him, but alſo made it probable, that he was guilty of more than he was at firſt even ſuſpected of. This juſtified the proſecuting him with the utmoſt ſeverity, and ſacrificing him to the indignant rage of the people, who called aloud for ſome victim, to atone for their reproachful loſſes.

The criminal ſoon perceived his error, and would have recanted all he had ſaid; but this was not admitted him; his own confeſſions had confirmed the charge againſt him, and he was given up to the laws; to which, on the evidence of ſuch ſtrong appearances, though no intelligence could be proved againſt him, but what he ſhowed the public authority mentioned before for, his life was declared a forfeit.

But the contemptibility of his ſtation and behaviour proved his ſafety, and mercy was extended to a wretch beneath vengeance, after he had ſerved the turn, and amuſed the people for his day.

I did not then ſtay in *England*, to ſee the event of this affair, but having learned it ſince my return, I thought

thought it better to conclude the ſtory in this place together, than to interrupt my narrative with it at another time.

It would be doing injuſtice to my maſter, to imagine that he had profited ſo little by his frequent intercourſe with perſons in genteel life, and particularly by her Grace's late example, as to think it neceſſary to apply the money ſhe had given him to any other uſe than his own: accordingly, when he was ſetting out, he gave me to his wife, for the ſupport of his family in his abſence.

But this ſpirited lady had a politer way of thinking than to obey his directions, or deny herſelf any of the genteel pleaſures of life, for the ſake of ſuch a mean domeſtic duty as the care of a family. As ſoon therefore as his back was turned, ſhe put on her hat and cardinal, and poſted away to one of her moſt intimate acquaintances, a lady who kept a chandler's ſhop in the neighbourhood, to adviſe with her about ſettling a party at her houſe for the next evening.

An affair of this importance required deliberation; accordingly, after tea, they retired into the bed-chamber, the parlour they ſat in being open to the ſhop, ſo that they were liable to be overheard by every one who ſhould come in; and there, over a comfortable glaſs of *right Holland*'s, fixed upon the company, and ſettled the ceremonial and fare of the entertainment. This great buſineſs being diſpatched, my miſtreſs returned home, and getting a gentleman, who lodged in her houſe at the expence of the ſtate, to write cards for her, ſent them by her huſband's aſſiſtant to the company, to invite them to play a game of cards, and ſpend the next evening with her, and then proceeded to put every thing in order for their reception.

Her great anxiety, and the preparation ſhe made, raiſed my curioſity not a little, to ſee the vanity and vice of the higher ranks of life mimicked by ſuch a ſet;

ſet; but I was diſappointed at that time, being paid away to a tavern-keeper next morning for wine and brandy for the occaſion.

My new maſter was a ſtriking inſtance of the inconſiſtency of life, and the hypocriſy of the human heart. He had for many years kept one of the moſt notorious brothel taverns in the town; but, not content with this public inſult to the laws, in defiance of every ſenſe of ſhame, he at the ſame time profeſſed himſelf a reformer of religion; and, while the groſſeſt ſcenes of riot and debauchery were carrying on openly in his houſe, was chanting hymns in a conventicle, and groaning in ſpirit for the wickedneſs of the times, with a face as meagre and mortified as the picture of famine. I ſee you wonder at ſuch a palpable contradiction, but that proceeds from ignorance of life, every view of which ſhows inſtances as groſs as this, the gaming devotee, the penſioned patriot, and the drunken prieſt, being equally offenſive to common ſenſe and reaſon. As for my maſter, he had as powerful motives for his conduct as the greateſt of them all. Poverty made him, in his early youth, turn pander to ſuch an houſe as he now kept, when the demure ſanctity of his looks ſcreened him ſo effectually from ſuſpicion, that he was able to make acquaintances in families, and accompliſh ſeductions, which no other of his trade dared to attempt. By theſe means, he ſoon acquired a ſum of money ſufficient to ſet up this houſe for himſelf, when his character immediately brought him into buſineſs, that, in a little time, made his fortune; but for this ſucceſs, he was chiefly indebted to a maſter-ſtroke of ſuperior genius; for having obſerved, in the myſtery of his profeſſion, that there is no private ſinner like a public ſaint, as ſoon as he thus roſe above the drudgery of buſineſs, and from porter became maſter of the tavern, he aſſociated himſelf with a ſet of reformers,

reformers, who went preaching up and down th town; at whose meetings he had an opportunity c finding out new faces for his best customers, an making acquaintances with the leaders, who, ob serving his discretion, soon admitted him into thei mystery, and made his house the scene of their secre meetings, to settle their business, laugh at the follie they lived by, and practise the vices which the preached against. Such success might be thought t have satisfied his avarice: but the habit has take such hold of him, that he cannot desist; and he no does, from inclination, what was at first the effect c necessity.

I should not have dwelt so long upon his characte but that it serves to explain the ways of the worl and prove the folly of an opinion generally receive among men, that they can change their course of lif whenever they please; and as soon as their end is an swered, and they have heaped up a fortune by the ini quity of a profession, quit it at once, and live virtu ously upon the earnings of vice.

The evening after I came into his possession, th high-priest of the conventicle called upon him, t spend an hour in spiritual conversation. After exa mining into his progress in grace, and the increa of his faith, and assurance of election (for such is th power of custom, and the pleasure of cheating th world, that they practise the art, even upon eac other), he told him, that he had a most particula occasion for his most private room this evening 'For, (said he, shaking him by the hand), my frienc 'as I have found by experience that the only wa 'to foil the devil is at his own weapons, I have ap 'pointed *Momus* the ballad-singer, whose attack upo 'me has made such a noise, to meet me here thi 'evening, and make up the affair over a glass c 'wine.'—'In truth (answered my master, a goo 'deal surprised) your reverence's meekness and pa

'tience muſt needs be very great, or you could not 'bear ever to mention him in any degree of Chriſtian 'charity and benevolence, after ſo outrageous and 'groſs an attack as he has made upon you, without 'the leaſt perſonal provocation: for what was it to 'him what you ſaid or did to the reſt of the world? 'his morals or religion were in no danger. But you 'were born to be an example of the age, and a ſhin-'ing light to guide the ſteps of the faithful.'

'A truce with this canting now, my friend (re-'plied the Doctor), and let us talk a few words, like 'men of the world. Your proved fidelity and pru-'dence making me not ſcruple to reveal the whole 'myſtery of the miniſtry to you, I will let you into 'the ſecret of this affair. You muſt know then, that 'I have, for ſome time, perceived the humour of the 'people begin to waver greatly, and the fervency of 'their devotion to cool, in ſpight of all I could do 'to keep it up, by preaching, faſting, prayer, and 'lamentation, by crying up my own piety, and the 'wonderful effects of my ſpiritual labours. It was 'neceſſary, therefore, to have recourſe to ſome new 'expedient to prevent their falling off entirely, and 'accordingly I pitched upon this, which has ex-'ceeded my expectations; for inſtead of making my 'people aſhamed of coming to me, it has piqued 'their pride, and now they reſolve to ſhow, that 'they ſcorn as much to be laughed as preached out 'of their own way. This, my friend, is the way of 'the world, which, ſince we cannot in reality mend, 'we muſt only ſtrive to make the beſt of. If I 'could carry on my buſineſs without this aſſiſtance, 'I moſt certainly would never have entered into ſuch 'a confederacy, any more than you would keep a 'brothel and entertain whores and rogues, if you 'could make equal profit by any other company.'

'I am much obliged to your reverence (returned 'my maſter), for putting me in any degree of com-

'pariſon

parison with yourself; but it is too great an honour? I act in a low sphere; but still I have the pleasure to think, that, even in my poor way, I contribute something towards your great work, as there could not be so many converts to resort to you for spiritual comfort, if there were no places of this kind to encourage vice and debauchery. You see, Sir, that I enter into the spirit of your design, and deserve your confidence by this return of mine. There are secrets in all professions; and, as you have entered into a league with your professed enemy, that you may be able to play into each other's hands, so I, notwithstanding the probity of my professions, have a private understanding with all the ladies of pleasure who resort to this house, who, in return for their being brought into good company, never fail to enhance expence, and countenance every imposition of false measures, false charges, and a thousand others, by which a prudent man turns the folly of the world to his own advantage. As to this confederacy between you and the balladsinger, I own I never suspected the least of it; and indeed I still am at a loss to think how you could bear the personal reflections especially which he has thrown upon you. What was the misfortune of your form to him, that he should call you Doctor *Hunch-back*?"—"Why that is true enough (answered the Doctor); in that he exceeded my directions; and to call him to an account for it, is part of the business of this appointment. Every thing else was settled between us. We have hitherto met at our friend Mrs. *Brimstone*'s, who first negotiated the affair between us, and consented to take her share of the ridicule, to advance the common cause. She will be here to-night too, so that we shall have an agreeable set. I believe I hear him just come in. I directed him to inquire for

'number one; do you ſhow him into the private 'room, and when the coaſt is clear I'll join you.'

CHAP. X.

Chrysal's maſter ſtarts at his own apparition. Interview between the Doctor and a noted ballad-ſinger. The hiſtory of a famous ballad. All trades alike.

THE perſon my maſter was ſent to meet, had ſomething ſo uncommon in his appearance, as inſtantly ſtruck my attention. Every paſſion of the human heart was printed in his face ſo ſtrongly, that he could at pleaſure diſplay it in all its force, while his every look and geſture turned ſome vice or folly into ridicule. 'You inquire for number one, Sir,' (ſaid my maſter, bowing with the profoundeſt reſpect).—'I do, Sir (anſwered the other, returning his bow, 'aſſuming his look, and imitating his voice, in a man-'ner that would have extorted laughter from deſ-'pair) inquire for number one.'

Though my maſter was no ſtranger to his talents, which he had often ſeen him diſplay at the expence of others, this perſonal application of them to himſelf threw him into ſuch confuſion, that in ſpight of his long-practiſed aſſurance, a bluſh feebly broke through his unimpaſſioned lifeleſs face, and he had ſcarce power to ſhow him into the room. The ballad-ſinger, ſeeing that he had him at command, would not purſue his advantage any farther at that time, for fear of frightening him away, but putting on the exact countenance, and mimicking the voice and manner of the Doctor, 'I am come, my friend and brother in 'the Lord (ſaid he), to inquire into thy ſpiritual 'eſtate, to give thee ghoſtly advice, and commune 'with thee for a ſhort ſpace for our mutual edifica-'tion.'

'tion.'—The ſurpriſe and manner of this addreſs had ſuch an effect upon my maſter, that he could not refrain burſting into laughter, and he immediately recovered from the confuſion into which the ridicule of himſelf had thrown him.

They were ſcarce ſeated when the Doctor entered, and addreſſing himſelf to the ſtranger, 'I am glad 'to ſee you, Sir (ſaid he, taking him by the hand), 'and heartily congratulate you on your ſucceſs: you 'ſee I was not miſtaken in my judgment. I knew 'what would take with the taſte of the public. There 'is nothing pleaſes them ſo much as a little pro'faneneſs and ridicule of religion: a fling at the 'clergy never fails to raiſe a laugh.'—'I acknow'ledge your judgment, Sir (anſwered the other, 'raiſing up his ſhoulders, rolling his eyes, and echo'ing every cadence of the Doctor's voice), and 'thank you for your congratulation; but I muſt 'beg leave to differ in opinion with you as to the 'cauſe of my ſucceſs, for I have never had the leaſt fling 'at the clergy, nor been guilty of profaneneſs or ri'diculing religion in my ballad; the abuſe of reli'gion by hypocriſy, and making the profeſſion of 'virtue a ſanction for the practice of vice, were the 'objects of my ſatire; and the reception it has met 'with from the public, ſhows that the people have a 'proper ſenſe of ſuch vices.'

The Doctor was ſo ſtruck at the reflection of himſelf when the other began to ſpeak, that he ſtarted in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and was unable to interrupt him till he had finiſhed his diſcourſe, which elſe he certainly would have done, while my maſter ſtood almoſt convulſed with laughter. But his triumph was not long; for the ballad-ſinger turning ſhort upon him, and inſtantaneouſly aſſuming his cadaverous appearance, and bowing in the ſame manner, 'And you, Sir (continued he, addreſſing himſelf to 'him), muſt have had ample experience, in the

'course of your business, that the taste of the town 'inclines quite another way, the most profligate in 'practice being the most pious in profession.'

This sudden transition from the Doctor, restored him to his spirits, who in his turn could not avoid pointing with his finger, and laughing most immoderately at the silly look of my master, though he was not quite so much abashed as he had been before.

As soon as the Doctor could speak, 'However I 'may doubt your opinion (said he to the ballad-'singer); I acknowledge the irresistible force of 'your powers of ridicule, and beg a cessation of 'them for a moment, till we talk of business. I will 'not dispute about the cause of your success, but I 'think you need not have fallen upon my person. 'My professions and practice surely were enough, 'with your own exaggerations. Why then need 'you give me the opprobrious nickname of *Hunch-back*, which has spread so that I shall never get rid 'of it? The very children haunt me with it as I go 'along the street.'

'Good Heavens (answered the other) how subject 'are the wisest men to the weakness of vanity! I 'should have thought that you were long since proof 'to any thing the world could say of you, or you 'would have given up your trade before now. As 'to my calling you this name, you must know, that 'the whole success of our scheme depended upon it; 'for if I had not turned the ridicule against your 'person, the taste of the public is so gross, that I 'might have laughed alone at your opinions. But 'what success have you had? Do you find your 'flock gather upon this attack on their shepherd?— 'Why pretty well (replied the Doctor) pretty well. 'They seem to shew a proper sense of it. As for 'me, I appear affected at it, in a very extraordinary 'manner, that is, solely upon your account; and to 'convince them and all the world of the strength of

'my

my charity, I deſign to-morrow to offer up prayers for your converſion, as being in a dangerous ſtate of ſalvation, and then, on the merit of that, to propoſe a ſubſcription, for the relief of two or three families, whom your example has led into ruin.'—'Bravo, Doctor! (interrupted the other) tell me of profaneneſs again! But I hope I am to have a ſhare in the ſubſcription, as it is to be propoſed on my account; at leaſt, you will let me aſſiſt in the diſtribution of it.'—'Take care, my friend! (returned the Doctor) another word of that kind, and I declare off the connection. I will have no body pry into my conduct, or interfere with my buſineſs! I did not aſk any part of your gains, though you got ſo much in every company where you ſung your ballad; nor did I ſpeak a word in behalf of the other poor ballad-ſingers, you picked up about the ſtreets, and ſet to ſing for you, though the wretches complained that you ſtarved them.'

The ballad-ſinger perceiving that he had touched upon a tender point, thought proper to wave it, as he did not chooſe to break off ſo advantageous a connection. 'As to that (ſaid he) I did but jeſt: I never interfere with any man's matters. But that's true! I have bad news to tell you! *The clerk of the pariſh* ſent me word yeſterday, that underſtanding I ſung my ballad to a pſalm tune, he let me know that I muſt change my note directly, or he would order the beadles to whip me out of the pariſh, if I ever preſumed to ſing there again; and, to mend the matter, at the ſame time ordered me to make uſe of an old black-guard tune which he ſent me, the vulgar ſtupidity of which blunts the edge of the ridicule, which was never turned againſt the tune itſelf, but ſolely againſt the proſtitution of it; which can never be ſo effectually attacked, as by repeating the manner, exactly, in which

'which it is ſung. But where is our friend *Brim-*
'*ſtone?* I expected to have met her here.'

Juſt as he ſaid this, my maſter was called out, where he found a venerable Matron, ſupported by two chairmen, who enquiring, in a feeble voice, for number *one*, he directly ſhewed her into the company.

CHAP. XI.

A venerable Matron completes the company. The curtain liſted up, and ſeveral unexpected diſcoveries made. MOMUS *plays ſucceſſively upon Doctor* HUNCH-BACK, *and Mother* BRIMSTONE. *After various diſaſters, the evening is concluded in character.*

THE Matron, whom my maſter was handing in to his friends, diſplayed one of thoſe figures, which loſe by the moſt forcible deſcription. Her face, though broken by debauchery and diſeaſe, preſerved the remains of a moſt pleaſing ſweetneſs and beauty; but her body was bloated by intemperance almoſt out of every reſemblance of the human form. She wore on her head a richly laced cap, over which, half a dozen fine handkerchiefs almoſt concealed a piece of greaſy flannel. Her gown, of the richeſt ſilk, flowed looſely round her, under a velvet cloak lined with ermine; while her legs and feet, ſwoln out of all ſhape, and too tender to bear any ligature, were wrapt up in flannels.

My maſter received this amiable creature from the chairmen, and ſtooping under as much as he was able to bear of the burthen of her body, aſſiſted her to limp into the room. The contraſt between her and the ſhabby ſkeleton her ſupporter, was ſo ſtrikingly ridiculous, that the moment they appeared,

ed, *Momus* burſt into an immoderate fit of laughter, and turning to the Doctor, (who was not much leſs affected, though practice had given him ſuch a maſtery over the muſcles of his face, that they never betrayed the paſſions of his heart); 'Behold (ſaid he) 'the bleſſed fruit of thy miniſtry, and rejoice! See 'how the ſpirit aſſiſteth the fleſh, to ſtruggle with 'the infirmities of nature.'——And then, waddling up to her, in her own gait, 'Dear mother, (addreſſing himſelf to her) give me your other arm; reſt 'a little part of your weight, an hundred or two, 'upon me. Come! Let me help you into that great 'chair!'——'Oh! oh! oh! my poor bones! (exclaimed ſhe) how you pull me along: you will tear 'me to pieces! oh! oh! oh!'——'Never fear, mother! never fear that! (anſwered he); Crazy as 'your carcaſe is, it will ſtick a little longer together; 'your friends are not ready for you yet.'——'Go! 'go! you are a wicked creature, a profane wretch.' ——'Dear Doctor, I thought I ſhould never ſee 'you more! I had a ſad night of it; a moſt ſad one 'indeed. But the ſpirit comforted me. Oh, if it 'were not for the comforts of the ſpirit, there 'would be no bearing the pains of this life! I was 'purely when you left me! Your pious converſation 'had comforted my heart; and the ſober bottle we 'cracked together, raiſed my ſpirits ſo, that I forgot 'all my pains. But I was not to be ſo happy long! 'Satan envied me, and threw temptation in my way. ——This wicked imp, and half a dozen of his 'roaring companions, came in upon me, juſt as you 'went out at the back door. Well, to be ſure they 'have a great deal to anſwer for! I was juſt beginning to read the pious exhortation you left me, 'when in they came, ſnatched the book out of my 'hand, and calling for the Ladies, inſiſted upon my 'ſitting with them; ſo, as you know I always loved 'innocent mirth, I could not refuſe: but, alas! I

'paid

'paid dearly for it this morning! My poor bones! 'and then my head! my poor head is quite gone, 'quite gone! I can bear nothing.—Oh what a dif-'ference there is between ſpending an evening in 'edifying converſation over a ſober bottle, with a 'pious friend or two, and theſe ranting riotous 'ſcenes! though they behaved ſo like gentlemen, 'and were ſo good company, that there was no leav-'ing them. But it is all folly! all vanity! I am 'reſolved I will leave it off! I will not follow it 'much longer, I am reſolved! I'll wean myſelf 'from this world, and think of nothing but a new 'life.——I hope the baronet won't uſe poor *Betſy* 'ill! I did not like his refuſing to taſte the ratifia! 'I ſhould be ruined if any thing ailed her; ſhe is 'more enquired for than all the Ladies in the houſe. '—And my Lord! He is ſweet company. But 'it is a pity he is ſo wicked! He was going to burn 'my book of devout exerciſes; and then, that pro-'fane ſong of yours! what need he ſing that! I 'wonder what pleaſure people can find in profane-'neſs! Where there is any enjoyment, it is another 'thing; but this is being wicked for wickedneſs-'ſake. It is a great pity, for he is a very generous-'ſine gentleman! He gave *Poll* ten guineas this 'morning: He's very fond of *Poll*; he always has 'her when *Betſy* is engaged! Oh! oh! ſhall I ever 'get rid of theſe pains! when ſhall I be happy in 'heaven?'

While ſhe was running on thus, the Doctor was buſied in writing a letter to himſelf, as from a family in diſtreſs, for whom he intended to ſolicit a ſubſcription, the next day, from his congregation; and my maſter was laying glaſſes on the table, and drawing the corks out of ſeveral bottles, ſo that *Momus* alone attended to her; by the ſignificant archneſs of whoſe look, it was eaſy to perceive, that he was laying up a fund for future entertainment, and would

not

not have interrupted her, had she continued her discourse never so long; but the Doctor's turning to the bottle put a stop to her, and introduced a general conversation.

'I am sorry, my friend, (said he, addressing himself to her) to hear you complain so; I left you in a blessed temperature of mind and body last night; but I much fear, that the intemperance you mentioned must have equally disturbed both. The most pious man knoweth not what folly he uttereth when he is full of wine: A little is good and rejoiceth the heart, but too much marreth the understanding, and letteth loose the secrets of the wife.'

'—As for that there, dear Doctor, never fear me! Since the blessed hour of my *call*, I have never disclosed one secret about the matter; I never mentioned a word of it.——But, Doctor, what did you do with the young lady, whom you would see home last night? I would not refuse you, to be sure; but I hope you have not put any more idle notions in her head: She is very young, and likely to do a great deal of business, therefore her *call* need not come this great while; it will be time enough some years hence: I had a great deal of trouble to bring her to; and now if you have spoiled her, I shall have all the work to do over again. No body knows the trouble and expence I am at, for the service of the public! No body knows! If it was not for me, gentlemen would be forced to take up with common servant maids, and such low-lived creatures; but I provide gentlewomen for them; Ladies of birth and education! and yet I am not regarded! no body thanks me: This is poor encouragement, to serve the public, very poor indeed! But virtue is its own reward! That's my comfort. I do the best I can; and if I do not receive a proper return, that is not my fault:

'fault: Let the world anſwer for it; I do my part, 'and ſo my mind is at eaſe.'

'That you do! (ſaid *Momus*, while ſhe ſtopped to 'drink) that you do! Your diligence never ſlackens! 'Come, fill your glaſs. Here's to the reformation of 'manners, a work that we all labour in alike.'—— 'By your leave, good Sir, (interrupted the Doctor, 'with a look and tone of offended importance) not 'all alike, I preſume! I believe you will allow, that 'there is ſome difference between your profeſſion and 'mine, at leaſt.'——'So then (anſwered *Momus*) 'you are returning to the old point! I thought I had 'ſaid enough to you on that head before! Differ'ence! aye! that there is indeed; but perhaps 'you are not ſenſible, in whoſe favour that differ'ence is! I ſing a ſong that makes people laugh, 'and put vice and folly out of countenance, by ſhew'ing them in a ridiculous light, and this only for a 'trifling pittance of that money which they devote 'to mere pleaſure; but you, by drawing horrors 'that never exiſted out of your own imagination, and 'preaching up doctrines impoſſible to practiſe, fright'en your poor deluded followers out of every en'joyment of their lives, and pillage them of the mo'ney, that ſhould ſupport their families, and pay their 'debts, under the pretence of imaginary charities!— 'This is the very difference between us.'——'Good 'lack! good lack! (interrupted the ſage Matron) how 'can people be ſuch fools, as to fall out thus about no'thing! What ſignifies it where the difference lies, 'ſo you can both do your buſineſs? It is juſt the 'ſame thing, as if my landlord here, and I, ſhould 'enter into a diſpute, about the reputation of our 'houſes. I thought I had made you both promiſe 'never to mention this matter any more! Come, 'Doctor! here is proſperity to all our buſineſs, with'out any ſuch fooliſh diſtinctions.'——

The

The judgment of this mediation was too plain to admit of any diſpute. The competitors filled their glaſſes, and, ſhaking hands very cordially, drank their friend's toaſt. 'Well, now, there is ſome pleaſure in this, (continued ſhe); things are like to go on well when all parties agree; but when ſome people fall out——you know the reſt of the ſaying. ——But, my friend *Momus*, I have news for you. That ſtory of the young Lady that you put in your ballad, has anſwered juſt as I ſaid. The world thought it would blow me up; but I knew better. I never had a greater run of company in my life, than to inquire into that affair; and they all of the right ſort, your ſecret, grave, old, rich culls, juſt fit to do buſineſs with. At firſt, I always deny it, with the ſtrongeſt oaths and imprecations, and rail at you for inventing ſuch a ſcandalous ſtory; but afterwards, as if I am put off my guard by the liquor, I ſeem to place a confidence in their profeſſions of ſecrecy and friendſhip, and, with many tears, own the whole; that is, ſo far as to my having the Lady in my power; and then the conſequence is, that they all intreat me to let them ſee her, (that is, ſingly, for ſuch chaps always come alone); when ſuch is the pleaſure of debauching virtue, that, beſides making me an handſome preſent for my kindneſs, they leave no temptation untried to prevail upon the Lady, whom they generally take to themſelves upon a genteel ſettlement; by which means, I have got a pretty ſum, and have beſides had an opportunity of providing for near a dozen of my women, who were too well known upon the town to do any thing in the public way; for this kind of cuſtomers have too great a regard for their characters, even to mix in company that might undeceive them. So you ſee, Doctor, that I do not forget your inſtructions, of doing all the good in my power; and ſure it is no

'small matter to rescue so many poor women, who 'were no longer capable of getting a genteel liveli-'hood for themselves, from want and misery, and 'getting them a comfortable settlement for life; so 'that they have nothing to do now, but attend to 'you, and make their peace with Heaven.—Come, 'here's my service to you, my friend *Momus;* and 'if you can think of any story of me that can serve 'your turn, and get off another ballad, never spare 'me; I'll forgive you.'—'And so will I too, (added 'the Doctor), though he should call me a worse name 'than *Hunch-back*. Let them laugh who win. While 'our railing at each other in public answers our own 'ends, we are fools to drop it: as to the deceit in it, 'it is a virtue; for sure it is better to live thus in 'friendship and charity with all mankind, than to be 'the real enemies we seem; and so, Sir, here's my 'hearty service to you: and let us pursue our works 'in concert, without any more of these broils. So 'let us drink about for an hour or two; for I must 'leave you early, being obliged to write an exhorta-'tion for the old Dutchess, which I must carry her 'early in the morning, when she designs to visit her 'cousin the Colonel, who is under sentence of death 'in Newgate for murder; not that I think either 'that, or her preaching, will have any effect upon 'him: but she will try, and I do not care to disob-'lige her, as she is not only a good subscriber upon 'all occasions, but also a credit to our conventicle, 'which would never have risen into such esteem with 'the people, if some persons of quality had not 'brought it into fashion.'—'Why, aye, to be sure 'there is a great deal in that, (added the Matron); 'fashion is a powerful thing. If it was not for that, 'I could never do the business I do. But since the 'nobility have made it the fashion to marry their 'mistresses, there is no great difficulty in bringing 'a private gentleman's daughter into our way of

'life,

'life, as it gives her the only chance she can possibly
'have of making her fortune, and becoming a Lady;
'for, as to the example of those few who married
'Ladies of virtue for mere love, it was too old-fashi-
'oned and romantic, to have any influence. But that's
'true, Doctor, I forgot to mention something to you
'last night, that has given me great concern. How
'could you be so indiscreet, as to accompany that
'highwayman to Tyburn the other day, and then
'to take his hand, and kiss it before all the people?
'Fie! it turns my stomach to think of it. I do not
'know how you can expect any Lady will let you ever
'kiss her lips after such a filthy action. Besides, it is
'a scandal to all your congregation, that you should
'appear so familiar with such low-liv'd creatures,
'and seems a kind of encouragement to their crimes.
'If you had heard what remarks two or three Ladies,
'who called at my house yesterday evening, made
'upon it, I am sure you would never do it again.'—
'Go to, woman! go to! (answered the Doctor,
'with a contemptuous look); take the beam out of
'thine own eye, before you find fault with the mote
'in your neighbour's. What highwayman's crimes
'are equal to yours? The greatest danger of scandal
'that ever I ran, has been in condescending to keep
'company with you. In that indeed I may be said,
'with too great an appearance of truth, to encourage
'the basest crimes.'——

The Matron, who, with all her prudence, was of a warm temper, could not brook such an insult as this, even from her spiritual guide, but catching up her glass, in the madness of her rage, which had deprived her of the power of utterance, she flung it at his head with all her strength, and with such an unlucky aim, that it felled him to the ground.—'Woman!' (sputtered she, as soon as her passion permitted her to articulate a word), 'Woman! Call your women about
'you! I scorn your words, you canting, hypocri-

'tical, vicious wretch, who, under the appearance 'of ſanctity and religion, cheat the credulous fools 'that mind you. You condeſcend to keep me com-'pany! you! a creature who would never have been 'taken notice of, had it not been for me! Did I 'not point you out the perſons proper for you to 'work upon? Was it not I that introduced you to 'thoſe very people of quality that now make you 'give yourſelf ſuch airs? Were they not moſt of 'them my acquaintances, and even indebted to me 'for the rank they now enjoy? I'll make you know 'yourſelf, you ſcoundrel: I will. I'll expoſe you 'to the world, and then ſee who will go to your 'conventicle, or ſubſcribe to your ſham charities. 'I'll make you know how to treat your ſuperiors for 'the future.'——

While the enraged Matron thus vented her fury, *Momus* and my maſter raiſed the Doctor from the ground, in a pickle not to be deſcribed. The glaſs had been thrown with ſuch ſtrength, that, had not his ſkull been of a comfortable thickneſs, his labours would have been at an end; however, it had made ſuch a gaſh on his temple, that he was in a moment in a gore of blood. The fight of this terrified them all. The Matron fainted (or pretended to faint) away; my maſter ran to get a napkin to wipe off the blood, while *Momus* ſupported the Doctor in his chair; but the firſt ſight of the wound convincing him that it was not dangerous, he reſolved to improve the accident to that diverſion which was the great purſuit of his life.

'Good Heaven!' (ſaid he in a low voice, as if ſpeaking to himſelf, and with all the appearance of diſtreſs), 'What will become of us all? We ſhall all 'be ruined by this unfortunate affair, even if we 'eſcape the death which inevitably awaits the 'wretched Murderers.'—'O Sir! (ſaid the Doctor, 'alarmed almoſt to deſpair), what do you think?

'Am

'Am I a dead man? Speak, I conjure you, give 'me ſome hopes!'—'Alas, my friend! I wiſh I 'could; but I muſt not flatter a man in your condi-'tion. If you have any concerns in this life to ſet-'tle, delay not a moment. This horrid fracture in 'your ſkull threatens immediate death. Heavens! '(ſtooping, and pretending to look earneſtly), how 'his brain works!'—'O what ſhall I do! (exclaim-'ed the terrified wretch), I cannot die! I am not 'fit to die! Oh! that I had followed ſome honeſt 'trade, and never taken to this of preaching! I 'might then have earned honeſt bread, as my fore-'fathers did, and eſcaped this miſerable death, and 'the more horrid fate that awaits me! What ſhall 'I do? What will become of me? How can I 'pray even to that God whom I have ſo often pro-'voked by my hypocriſy and crimes!'—

My maſter, by this time, had wiped the wound, and ſeeing, though it bled ſo violently, from the num-ber of little veſſels that are in that part, there was no fracture of the ſkull, and therefore no danger in it, 'Be comforted, Sir, (ſaid he), you have time enough 'to prepare yourſelf for death. I'll inſure you from 'any danger this time.'—'How, my deareſt, beſt 'friend,' (ſaid the Doctor, catching his hand, and kiſſing it in ecſtaſy), 'Is my life ſafe? Is not the wound 'mortal?'—'Mortal! no! nor even dangerous, if 'the ſurgeons do not make it ſo. Give me leave to 'put a plaſter to it, which I always have in readineſs 'in the houſe, in caſe of accidents, as gentlemen of-'ten quarrel for their women in their liquor; and 'I'll engage that it ſhall give you no farther trouble: 'Many a guinea have I got by it; for, when any ſuch 'thing happens, I immediately ſlip on a full-trimm'd 'ſuit, a big wig, and a ſword, which a ſurgeon once 'pawned to me for a debt of two guineas, and up I 'go, do the job, take the fee, and come away as

'good a ſurgeon as the beſt: never fear, Sir, I'll 'inſure you from this ſcratch.'

The conſolation which this news gave the Doctor, is not to be expreſſed. He hugged and kiſſed his dear friend, till he made him in as bloody a condition as himſelf, and in the joy of his heart even forgave the cauſe of his fears, who had all this time counterfeited a ſwoon. But *Momus*, who ſaw his ſport with the Doctor thus cut ſhort, ſoon brought her to herſelf; for, taking a glaſs of brandy, as if to hold to her noſe, in the affected awkwardneſs of his hurry and confuſion he ſpilled it all over her face, and then taking a bit of burnt paper to try what that would do, he deſignedly neglected to blow it out, and ſo holding it to her noſe, ſet the brandy he had ſpilled upon her face on fire. This inſtantly awoke her from her ſwoon. She ſhrieked out, when he, in the ſame affected confuſion, flung the baſon of bloody water, in which the Doctor's wound had been waſhed, full in her face. This indeed quenched the flame, but then it put her in a condition as dirty and diſagreeable as that of my maſter or the Doctor; the conſequence of which was, that the Doctor could not refrain from burſting out a laughing. 'Well my friend, ſaid 'he, (taking her by the hand), it is but juſt, that 'you ſhould ſhare in the effects of your own raſhneſs. 'But let there be no more of it. We have both 'been in fault perhaps; and ſo let us only be more 'cautious for the future. What I have ſuffered was 'done by deſign, and had like to have been attended 'with dreadful conſequences; yours is all accidental 'and trifling.'——

While the Doctor was thus piouſly making peace, my maſter was cleaning himſelf, and ſetting the room to rights. *Momus* aſſiſted the Matron to cram half a dozen napkins down her boſom, to dry the water he had bathed her with; which he performed with ſo well-acted an anxiety and care, that even ſhe was deceived,

ceived, and attributed all that had happened to her to his confusion; and being glad to get so well off an affair that might have ended so much worse, she complied with the Doctor's advances to a general reconciliation, and so all things were restored to their former harmony. As to the Doctor's wound, by a ready presence of mind, he found a way to make an advantage of it, by telling his congregation next day, that he had received it from some of *Momus*'s gang, who had attempted to assassinate him, in revenge of the contempt into which he had brought their master.

Matters being thus happily settled, the rest of the night was devoted to mirth, and concluded with a song in character by each of the company; of which *Momus*'s was the most humorous, my master's the grossest, the Matron's the loosest, and the Doctor's the most daringly profane, perhaps to obliterate the remembrance of his late religious qualms. After this the company broke up, when the Doctor, having occasion for some money early in the morning, borrowed a couple of pieces from my master, among which I was, who lent them very unwillingly, and then retired to bed to his bar-maid; for he had too genteel notions of life to marry.

CHAP. XII.

The Doctor pays a visit to an useful friend. The mystery of controversy. He waits upon her Grace with a pious exhortation for her friend. CHRYSAL *enters into the service of her Grace. Her disappointment in her visit to the prison. Her Grace's character.*

THOUGH it was late when the company broke up, my new master, who never neglected business for pleasure, did not forget the *Exhortation* which

which he was to carry to her *Grace* the next morning; not that he was at the trouble of compoſing it himſelf: his time was too precious to be employed ſo: the more important cares of his flock, which he could not entruſt to any other; as viſiting his great proſelytes, receiving and diſtributing charity, and his inceſſant exerciſe of all the ſacerdotal functions, ſcarce allowed him time for the neceſſary refreſhments of nature, and would have been deemed an intolerable burden, had they been enjoined by the moſt expreſs revelation of the divine will, though ambition, avarice, and the pleaſure of deceit, made him undertake them voluntarily: but ſtill, to ſecure to himſelf every degree of religious merit, he kept a moſt laborious author, a degraded clergyman, in conſtant employment, whoſe works he paſſed upon the public for his own, when he did not immediately direct them againſt himſelf.

To this learned perſon, therefore, he went upon the preſent occaſion; and having him called from a night-cellar, where he was holding forth on religion and politics to a company of chairmen, he told him his buſineſs, and deſired him to ſet about it directly. 'Good good Sir (ſaid the author), this is a very unſeaſonable time to ſet me upon ſuch a work. From five this morning till eleven at night have I laboured inceſſantly; and now when I have juſt ſtepped out to take a little neceſſary refreſhment'—'Refreſhment! (anſwered my maſter); tell me not of refreſhment, or any thing elſe: Either do my buſineſs, or ſay you will not. I can get enough to undertake it, and gladly too, for leſs than I give you.'—'That is impoſſible (replied the author) if they are to live by it. I am ſure what you give me, ſcarce keeps me from ſtarving.'—'Starving! (returned my maſter); ſo it appears indeed, when you this moment have been indulging in riot and luxury, and ſmell ſo ſtrong of ſpirituous liquors, that

'that it is offenfive to fobriety to ſtand near you. I 'wonder you are not aſhamed to be guilty of ſuch 'intemperance: it ill becomes a man of morality 'and religion.'—'Sir, Sir (interrupted the author, 'provoked beyond his patience), have ſome regard 'to truth and reaſon in what you ſay; and look at 'home before you accuſe me of intemperance. I la-'boured the whole day without any other refreſh-'ment or ſuſtenance than a mouthful of bread and 'cheeſe, and a draught of ſmall-beer; and now have 'had only a quartern of gin in a pint of warm por-'ter, to waſh down half a pound of ſauſages; and 'you call this intemperance. If I may judge by 'appearances, you have not ſpent your evening on 'ſuch fare.'—'How I have ſpent my evening (re-'turned my maſter, who in ſpite of himſelf felt the 'juſtice of the reproach) is nothing to the purpoſe: 'I am anſwerable for what I do. But this manner 'of talking ſignifies nothing; I muſt have this *Ex-'hortation* by eight in the morning; it will not take 'you up much time. You are ſufficiently practiſed 'in the ſtyle; the matter is of little conſequence. If 'you chooſe to drink a glaſs of wine, here is half a 'crown, which I make you a preſent of. I would 'by no means have you ſtinted of any thing that is 'proper.'—'Sir (anſwered the author), I am much 'obliged to you; I will take care that it ſhall be 'ready at the time. You are ſenſible that I never 'think much of any labour to ſerve you. I have 'finiſhed all the pamphlets you ordered about the 'ballad-ſinger's affair. Here they are. This is a 'letter from you to him, that lays him flat; I have 'quoted half the fathers of the church againſt him. 'Theſe two are letters to you upon the ſubject, one 'as from a great lord, the other from a reverend di-'vine, ſetting forth the great benefits of your miniſ-'try, and expoſing the profaneneſs and immorality 'of his ballad. This here is a ſilly vindication of

'his

'his ballad, in a letter to the author, from one of his 'ranting companions; and this laſt is an addreſs to 'the public againſt all thoſe irreligious and profane 'amuſements of ballads, balls, routs, &c. This is a 'maſter-piece. You ſee it is as from myſelf, if you 'do not chooſe to own it; though I do not know 'but it may have more weight with your enemies, if 'it appears as from another. So you ſee I have 'worked hard to-day; and now I believe we have 'done with Mr. *Momus* and his ballad.'—'Why 'aye! pretty well, I believe (ſaid my maſter): But 'hold, I have a thought juſt come into my head.— 'You muſt know that the parſon of the pariſh has 'ſent for that reprobate, that *Momus*, and ordered 'him to alter the tune of his ballad, as it happened 'to have ſeveral of the ſame notes with the pſalm-'tunes. Now as this is known, what do you think 'of writing a letter to me, as from the parſon, ſet-'ting forth what he has done, and inſinuating that it 'was by the direction of the ſquire?—this will clinch 'the affair. After ſuch an authority, no one will 'dare to ſay a word in its behalf: Beſide, it will 'have a good look to be taken notice of by ſuch 'people.'—'That is true (anſwered the author); 'it will ſo; and the parſon's notice ſhall not be 'thrown away. I'll do it to-morrow morning, as 'ſoon as I ſend you the *Exhortation*.'—My maſter then wiſhed him a good night, and left him to return to his company, while he himſelf went directly home, to prepare for the duties of the next day.

He had ſcarce ſlept off his debauch, when he was called to chant his matin ſong; after which he did not fail to diſplay the wound in his temple, the occaſion of which he promiſed to unfold to his congregation in the evening. This he did to raiſe a curioſity that ſhould gather his whole flock, to hear ſo extraordinary an affair, as he deſigned to propoſe a ſubſcription,

tion, when their paſſions ſhould be warmed by ſuch an horrid attempt upon their paſtor.

By the time he had finiſhed this firſt work of the day, the *Exhortation* was brought him from the author, with which he went directly to her Grace. He found her (unfaſhionably early as it was for a perſon of her rank to be even up) dreſſed and waiting for him. 'Pleaſe your Grace (ſaid he), here is the '*Exhortation* your Grace deſired of me; and I pray 'Heaven it may prove ſucceſsful. I am afraid I 'have made your Grace wait, but I came the mo-'ment I had finiſhed the firſt duties of the morning. 'If your Grace pleaſes, I will do myſelf the honour 'to accompany your Grace. Perhaps my perſonal '*Exhortation* and prayer may have more effect. My 'miniſtry has often been bleſſed with aſtoniſhing ſuc-'ceſs.'—'I am ſenſible of that, Doctor (anſwered 'her Grace); but this unhappy man is of ſuch a 'ſtrange temper, that I apprehend he might be guil-'ty of ſome act of raſhneſs that might be dangerous 'to your perſon, if you were to go to him without 'his conſent; and that, I am much afraid, I ſhall 'hardly obtain. No longer ago than yeſterday, 'near as the dreadful hour of his execution approach-'es, did I find him engaged at cards with his gaoler; 'and when I expoſtulated with him on the danger of 'trifling away his few remaining moments in ſo idle 'a manner (for I was apprehenſive of exaſperating 'him, if I ſpoke with greater ſeverity), he only 'ſmiled, and anſwered me with a paſſage out of ſome 'play.'—'Yes, pleaſe your Grace (replied my maſ-'ter, with a lifted eye and deep-fetched groan), 'cards and plays are the bane of half the world: re-'ligion is quite neglected for them. The great 'work of reformation will never be completed, till 'they are utterly aboliſhed. As your Grace does 'not think it meet that I ſhould viſit this unfortu-'nate gentleman in perſon, I am obedient to your

'Grace's

'Grace's pleaſure; however, I will offer up my 'prayers for him; and my ſpirit ſhall aſſiſt your 'pious endeavours. Not that I fear what man can 'do unto me: the angel of the Lord watcheth over 'me, or the ſtroke that made this wound had given 'me reſt from my labours.'

He then diſplayed the mark of mother *Brimſtone*'s rage, and told her Grace ſo moving and circumſtantial a ſtory of his having been way-laid, and attacked by ſome of *Momus*'s riotous companions, that ſhe implicitly believed him, and ſympathized in his ſufferings. He then gave her the *Exhortation*, which ſhe was to deliver to her unfortunate couſin; and ſeeing her uneaſy at being obliged to wait till the bank ſkould be open, to get money to diſtribute among the poor wretches in the priſon, he accommodated her Grace with change for a twenty pound note, having (as he told her Grace) juſt ſo much about him, which he was carrying to relieve a poor induſtrious family, in great diſtreſs.

It was a great pleaſure to me, that I changed my ſervice upon this occaſion, as I was heartily ſick of my maſter; though from a view I took of his heart, I ſaw that I had not been witneſs to half the myſtery of his iniquity.

My new miſtreſs went directly to the priſon, to her couſin, where ſhe had a ſufficient opportunity for the exertion of her charity, among his unhappy fellow-priſoners, while ſhe waited for his riſing, which was not till very late, as he had ſat up the whole night before, at his beloved diverſion of card-playing. When at length ſhe got admittance to him, her reception was far from being worthy of the trouble ſhe had taken, and the piety of her intentions. He aſked her if ſhe had procured him a pardon? and when ſhe anſwered in the negative, and aſſured him that all ſuch hopes were vain, he then told her, that he would diſpenſe with the continuation of her viſits,

and

and the repetition of any more, and in a man
forced her away, ſcarce permitting her to ment
the motive of her coming, or to enforce the *Exho*
tion of my late maſter, which ſhe with difficulty p
ſuaded him to take, though, from the manner of
receiving it, there was little probability of his
taking the trouble to read it.

My miſtreſs, for I had the good fortune to ren
in her poſſeſſion, was ſo ſhocked at this inſenſibil
that ſhe went directly home, and ſought relief fi
the ſolid comforts of religion, pouring out her h
in unfeigned prayer, for the converſion of him,
every other object of the divine diſpleaſure;
though a miſguided fervency of devotion had m
her, in ſome meaſure, a dupe to the hypocritical
of my late maſter, nothing could lead her from
pureſt paths of true piety and virtue; nor did
ſuffer the extravagance of his pretended enthuſiaſ
far to blind her better judgment, as to make her a
the entertainments frequented by perſons of her
and rank.

CHAP. XIII.

Hiſtory of a Lady of faſhion. Deſcription of a
CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a lad*
enterprize. A bold ſtroke for a huſband.

SHE accordingly went that afternoon to the h
of a lady of quality, where a great concourſ
the beſt company uſually aſſembled on ſet invitati
to ſpend the evening, at the favourite amuſemen
cards. The lady of the houſe was one of thoſe c
dren of fortune, who riſe by the means that
thouſands. In her early youth ſhe had ſacrificed
virtue to vanity, and yielded to the looſe deſires of

nobleman she was now married to, over whom her humble obliging temper, and particularly her complaisant blindness to his other amours, gained her such an ascendency, that in a fit of uncommon fondness he made her his wife. But the method he took to secure himself the ease and conveniences he enjoyed with her, directly overturned them; for her humility and complaisance were all feigned; and the necessity of counterfeiting them being thus removed, she immediately assumed all the importance of her new character, and exerted the usual prerogatives of it, in as high a manner, as if she had never been in a meaner rank. The infatuated husband soon saw his error; but it was too late to remedy it: he therefore is forced to compound with her for the indulgence he desires, by submitting to let her gratify her passion for vain pomp and expensive ceremony, under the parade of which she strives to hide her obscure original, as she attempts to obliterate the remembrance of her fall from virtue, by a most rigid profession of religion. Thus, her routs are the most splendid, and difficult of access, of any in the town, no person being invited but those of the first rank, nor any who are not invited being admitted, be their rank what it will; and she professes herself a strict follower of my late master in his most extravagant opinions, where they do not immediately interfere with her own vanity.

It is impossible to convey any notion to you, of such a scene as this, to which my mistress carried me, it is so different from that sphere in which you have acted. Suppose you see several hundred people of both sexes, and of every age, dressed in all the profusion and elegance of expence, and wearing dissipation and happiness in their looks, assembled together, to spend the evening in mutual entertainment. This is the face of the picture; but turn the reverse, and you shall behold a set of people who have sacrificed their real interest and the peace of their minds, to the

the gratification of this, and such like pleasures; and who come purely to prey upon each other: accordingly the whole is one continued scene of sharping, mutual distrust, envy, slander, and malevolence; the very few, who, like my mistress, came there for mere amusement, and are untainted with such vices, being forced to submit, in seeming acquiescence, to the torrent they are not able to stem.

In the course of the evening, it was my fortune often to change my service; but as the stay I made with my momentary possessors was so very short, I shall wave giving any account of them, (especially as the two most remarkable of the set, and under whom all the rest, who launch out of the common road of life, are in a great measure characterised, have been sufficiently described on a former occasion, though the histories I read in many of their hearts would afford much entertainment), and hasten to the lady, in whose possession I left the company.

My new mistress was the young widow of a person of great distinction, who, in the decline of life, had overlooked the disparity of age and rank, and married her solely to gratify his passion for beauty. During the few years he lived, his care and prudence kept her indiscretion within bounds; but as soon as that guard was removed, she plunged into all the fashionable follies of the times, with a keenness that courted ruin.

But though she eagerly followed every pursuit that bore the name of pleasure, vanity was the ruling passion of her heart. The rank into which her husband had lifted her, placed her upon a level, in point of society, with the best company, and the fortune he left her was sufficient to support that rank. But still, as there were many degrees above her, her heart pined for precedency, and she could not enjoy the honours she had, while she was obliged to give place to so many.

She had formed a variety of ſchemes to obtain this deſired object, but ſtill without ſucceſs. At length, the very night I came into her poſſeſſion, an accident ſuggeſted one to her, which ſhe immediately put in execution, with the moſt ſanguine hopes. There had been a nobleman of the firſt rank in the company, the weakneſs of whoſe reaſon had obliged his friends to put him under the government of a perſon, to whoſe fidelity they thought they could entruſt ſo important a charge. As private misfortunes are always an agreeable topic for public converſation, an elderly lady, who was acquainted with this nobleman's family, entertained the company with ſeveral melancholy inſtances of his weakneſs. My miſtreſs regarded this, only as it was meant, as common chat, till ſome time after, the nobleman happening to fix his eye, with ſome earneſtneſs upon her, a ſudden thought darted into her mind, that if ſhe could any way bring about a marriage with him, all her dear views of ambition would be gratified at once.

The moment this thought took poſſeſſion of her head, it drove out every other. She loſt deal! She revoked! She miſſed reckoning her honours! In ſhort ſhe was ſo abſent, that ſhe was obliged to pretend a violent headach, and leave the company. As ſoon as ſhe got home, ſhe went to bed, where ſhe ſpent the night in forming numberleſs projects, for accompliſhing her deſign; but ſtill, the account which the old lady had given, of the vigilance of the perſon to whoſe care the nobleman was entruſted, diſconcerted them all. At length, ſhe reſolved to attempt corrupting his fidelity, as ſhe could not expect to elude his vigilance. She had often heard that the greateſt honeſty was not proof againſt a proper price, and her knowledge of her own heart did not contradict that opinion. However, not to be too raſh, nor betray her deſign, before ſhe had ſome proſpect of ſuc-

ceſs,

neſs, ſhe reſolved to ſound the perſon, before ſhe applied directly to him.

Accordingly, as ſoon as ſhe got up, ſhe wrote him an anonymous letter, letting him know, that a perſon had a certain affair to propoſe to him, for his concurrence, in which he ſhould receive immediately a thouſand guineas, and an annuity of five hundred pounds a year, beſide ſeveral other conſiderable advantages; and that what he was deſired to do could be effected, without any poſſible loſs, or danger to himſelf. This letter ſhe ſent by the penny-poſt, and deſired the anſwer might be returned in the ſame manner, under a feigned direction, to the houſe of a perſon in whom ſhe confided.

Such a letter neceſſarily ſurpriſed the gentleman to whom it was ſent. Though the greatneſs of the offer convinced him that ſome extraordinary piece of villany was deſigned, yet, as he knew himſelf above temptation, he reſolved to humour the ſcheme, till he ſhould diſcover the whole of it, for the honeſt revenge of puniſhing a baſe attempt to ſeduce him into diſhoneſty. Accordingly he anſwered the letter directly, in ſuch terms as he imagined would tempt the writer to be more explicit, expreſſing his readineſs to embrace any propoſal that ſhould be ſo advantageous, when he ſhould be ſatisfied, that the perſon who made it was able to perform it, and worthy of his confidence.

This bait took, as he deſired. My miſtreſs, whoſe eager imagination was too full of the deſired object, to let her uſe any caution, thought her work done, and immediately wrote him another letter, to which ſhe ſigned her name, and in it explained her whole ſcheme of marrying the nobleman, by his aſſiſtance, enforcing her former offer, by a promiſe of continuing him in the agency of the eſtate, or rather indeed of ſharing it with him, and deſiring to meet him that evening, either at her houſe, or any other place he

pleaſed, to confer upon proper means, for bringing it into immediate execution.

The gentleman was not a moment at a loſs how to act on ſuch an occaſion: he immediately waited upon the nobleman, who was next heir to his unhappy charge, and ſhowing both the letters, deſired his directions how to act. Though this nobleman was ſtruck with horror at a piece of villany that did ſuch diſhonour to the ſex, reſpect for the memory of the worthy man whoſe name ſhe bore, would not permit him to expoſe her to public inſult: however, to prevent her making the like attempt elſewhere, he reſolved to ſhock her, by a perſonal detection; accordingly, he made the gentleman write her word, that it was improper for him to be ſeen going to her houſe, but that, if ſhe pleaſed, he would meet her, at eight that evening, at a certain tavern, where ſhe ſhould enquire for him, by the name of Mr. *Trueman*. Such a proſpect of immediate ſucceſs, made her blind to every appearance of deceit or danger, and accordingly ſhe prepared to attend the appointment, with the moſt ſanguine expectation.

But his lordſhip had prepared a reception for her which ſhe never ſuſpected. A little before the time he went to the tavern with the gentleman, and, fixing upon a room in which there was a cloſet, large enough for him and another nobleman, whom he took with him, left word, that if any lady ſhould enquire for Mr. *Trueman*, ſhe ſhould be told that he was above alone, and the gentleman called down to her. As they judged, her impatience brought her rather before the time, when her imagined confederate ſhowing her up into the room, and placing her ſo, that every word ſhe ſaid might be heard in the cloſet, he entered into converſation with her on the ſubject of their meeting, in which he led her to repeat her whole propoſal, and, by ſtarting difficulties, to enforce it with every iniquitous argument in her power.

As

As ſoon as his lordſhip thought ſhe had ſaid enough, he iſſued from his concealment, and, looking her full in the face, calmly thanked her for the care ſhe was taking to preſerve the noble family of his relation, which ſhe had whimſically given as one of the reaſons of her deſiring this marriage. It is impoſſible to deſcribe her ſituation at the ſight of this nobleman, whom ſhe well knew, as well as his intereſt in defeating her deſign. Aſtoniſhment, ſhame, and confuſion ſtruck her motionleſs and dumb. She was juſt able to turn her eye to her betrayer, and then fell in a ſwoon upon the floor. Such diſtreſs naturally ſoftened the reſentment of the generous nobleman, to whom ſhe had deſigned ſuch an injury: he aſſiſted to raiſe her from the ground, and having with difficulty brought her to herſelf, inſtead of aggravating her diſtreſs by reproaches, mildly adviſed her to deſiſt from ſuch unjuſtifiable ſchemes, and promiſed her, that he would take no notice of what had happened, if he found that her future conduct merited ſuch tenderneſs.

This treatment had the wiſhed effect. That falſe ſpirit which would have borne her up againſt any ſeverity, ſunk before ſuch unexpected delicacy and compaſſion. She melted into a flood of tears; and, unable to utter a word, fell upon her knees, and kiſſed the hand of the nobleman, in a rapture not to be expreſſed; who immediately raiſed her from the ground, and telling her, that he imagined it muſt be diſagreeable to her to ſtay there any longer, ordered a chair, and handed her to it himſelf, with the utmoſt politeneſs and reſpect.

Her ſituation, when ſhe got home, was truly pitiable. The aſſurance of her late hopes doubled the diſtreſs of her diſappointment, and the fear of ſhame made the thought of her guilt intolerable. She curſed her own folly, the perfidy of her betrayer, and all the ways of faithleſs man; and, in the agony of her grief, reſolved to leave this deteſted town next morning, and

and bury herſelf for ever from the world in her country ſeat.

This reſolution ſhe held till next morning, when ſhe actually ſet out for the country; but I have reaſon to believe it did not hold very long, as I have frequently ſeen her ſince, in all public places, as gay and unconcerned as ever. As for me, I was given to her coachman, to pay the farrier who took care of her horſes; but he thought it more neceſſary to give me in payment of a debt of his own, to a man who kept a beer-houſe, who gave me to an attorney, to defend him againſt a proſecution for entertaining a gang of ſtreet-robbers, and buying their booty. By the attorney I was given, in the courſe of buſineſs, to a knight of the poſt, whoſe evidence was to acquit the publican. From this conſcientious perſon, as he was on his way to a country aſſizes, where the lives of many depended on his good nature, I was taken by an highwayman, who loſt me that evening to a nobleman at an horſe-race.

CHAP. XIV.

Chrysal, by a natural progreſſion, comes into the poſſeſſion of a knight of induſtry, who brings him to an horſe-race, where he has an opportunity of ſeeing a noble jockey practiſe part of the myſterious ſcience of the turf, with other common occurrences.

IN the three or four laſt changes of my ſervice, there was nothing remarkable. The progreſſion was natural, and the events common: but I muſt own I was a good deal ſurpriſed at ſeveral occurrences in my preſent ſtation, which were in the preſent courſe of things ſo ſtrange and unaccountable, that the moſt whimſical

whimſical devil could never have thought of them without information.

The *gentleman* who had acquired me ſo eaſily on the road, and brought me to the *meeting*, was a native of a neighbouring nation, who, on the credit of his ſkill in the myſterious ſcience of *chance*, ſupported by a good ſtock of aſſurance and perſonal courage, had come over to make his fortune; in which deſign he had really ſo far ſucceeded, that he had lived for ſeveral years in the higheſt life, and maintained the appearance of the eſtate he talked of in his own country, by the ſole force of his genius, the fertility of which was not confined to one reſource; but, when fortune frowned upon his labours at play, was always ready to redreſs the effects of her malice, by the method in which I came into his poſſeſſion.

The roads had been *bad* that morning, which kept him a little later than uſual, ſo that company were at the *poſt* when he joined them. By their noiſe and appearance as we rode up to them, I took them for a crowd of their own ſervants, their dreſs being exactly the undreſs uniform of that party-coloured tribe, and every voice being exerted with the ſame vehemence, and in the like ſtyle of oaths and imprecations, with which thoſe gentry receive them, at the door of a play-houſe or palace; ſo that I ſcarce knew how to believe my ſenſes, when I recognized the faces of ſeveral perſons of the moſt elevated ſtations, and particularly moſt of thoſe among whom I had ſpent the evening I deſcribed to you at the *club*, on my firſt coming to this part of the world.

As ſoon as the *bets* were *made*, and the noiſe began to ſubſide a little, my maſter preſſed through the mob of pick-pockets, bubbles, lords, and jockeys, and came up to the poſt, juſt as they were preparing to *ſtart*, when calling to one of the grooms, 'Well, my 'lord,' (ſaid he); *Well*, Jack,' (replied the other), 'where have you been all day?'—This was all the diſcourſe

diſcourſe they had time for, the horſes going off that moment: but on the ſtrength of this, my maſter *backed* his lordſhip deeply.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe to you, who have never ſeen any thing of the kind, a ſcene of ſuch confuſion as the field was during the running, the whole mob, high and low, riding headlong from place to place, and driving againſt each other, without any reſpect to rank, or regard to ſafety, and roaring out their *bets*, and ſhouting for joy, at every viciſſitude in the running. At length the *heat* was ended, but ſo contrary to my maſter's expectation, that he loſt to a noble duke, who was in the ſecret, not only all the fruits of his morning's campaign, but a large ſum beſides, more than he was able to pay.

This was a ſevere ſtroke. He rode directly up to the poſt, and, addreſſing the ſame groom, juſt as he came out of the *ſcales*; 'Sblood, my lord, (ſaid he), how could you fling me ſo? I am quite broken up: his Grace has touched me for 500, and the devil of the thing is, that I have been ſo *torn* down by a *bad run* of late, that I am quite out of caſh, and have not a ſhilling to pay him.'—'How could this be, (replied the groom), did I not give you the *word*? but you are ſuch a careleſs ſon of a bitch'—'The word with a vengeance, (anſwered my maſter); you returned me *well*, but I have found it very ill.'—Aye, I gueſſed it was ſo, (replied the groom); you were ignorant that we were *ſmoaked*, and found it neceſſary to change the *lay*. Where the devil were you all this morning? taking a ride I ſuppoſe: you will never leave off, till theſe rides bring you to ride in a cart to Tyburn; but keep out of his Grace's way till the horſes ſtart, and we will *bring you home*, I will engage. He thinks he has all the ſecret, but he is miſtaken this bout, and ſhall pay for his entrance, before we admit him to be *one of us*.'—This diſcourſe paſſed as they were walking together.

together to a booth, where the groom was to *rub* and *ſettle* next heat.

You are ſurpriſed at this familiarity between my maſter and the groom. When he at firſt addreſſed him by the title of *My lord*, I own I thought it no more than a *cant*, which, in the freedom of this intercourſe, where lords and lacquies are upon a level, is common: but what was my aſtoniſhment at a nearer view, to ſee that he really was the thing he was called, and that a laudable ambition of excelling in every the meaneſt art, had induced him, and many others of his rank, who were riding againſt him, to take the place of their ſervants in this fatiguing and dangerous employment, ennobling, by this condeſcenſion, the moſt abject and vile offices, with the honours earned by the merit and virtues of their anceſtors? Strange ambition, at a time when the intereſt and glory of their country called for their aſſiſtance.

As ſoon as the noble groom and my maſter were alone; 'Now, Jack, what think you of my little '*ſtun-orſe*? (ſays his lordſhip). You muſt know 'that I have *meaſured the foot* of them all in this heat, 'and find, that *I have the heels* by a *diſtance* at leaſt; 'but the weights are above my *trim*. However, we 'have a remedy for that: look at this cap, (taking 'one out of a cheſt, in which his running dreſs had 'been brought to the ground); this is a *leaden ſkull*, 'and weighs above two *ſtun*; put this on your head, 'the thickneſs of your own ſkull will prevent its 'giving you the headach: aye, it fits you very well. 'Now, I will wear this to the poſt, and, juſt before 'we ſtart, complain that my cap is too wide, and 'borrow your's to ride in; and when I alight at 'the *ſcales*, after the heat is over, I will pull off 'your's, as if to wipe my face, and give it to you 'to hold, who can return me this to weigh in; and, 'as I wear the ſame truſſes, ſtuffed with handker-'chiefs, in which I carried the weight laſt heat, they

'never

'never will ſuſpect us.—Ha, Jack, what ſay you to 'this? match me this among all your *Hibernian* 'tricks, if you can. Go your way: double with 'his Grace, and *lay* all you can, I'll go with you; 'but be ſure to meet me at the poſt before, and at 'the ſcales after the heat, and not to blow the buſi-'neſs, by being in too great a hurry.'

I ſee you wonder how his lordſhip could put ſuch confidence in my maſter, as he ſeemed to know him ſo well; but the truth was, my maſter's character for courage was ſo well eſtabliſhed, that it bore him through things every day of his life, unconvicted at leaſt, if not unſuſpected, for which a more timorous villain would have been pilloried; and this made the other think him the ſafeſt perſon to entruſt with the execution of ſuch a ſcheme, as no one would dare to attempt examining the cap, or preventing his reaching it to his lordſhip.—The fineſſe ſucceeded; his lordſhip *beat every tail hollow*; and my maſter not only *cleared* with his Grace, but alſo won conſiderably for himſelf and his confederate beſide. Things were carried on in the ſame genteel manner for the remainder of the meeting, at which there was a vaſt concourſe of the beſt company, the weather being very delicate, the turf in choice order, and the ſport very fine, and ſo fair, that the *knowing ones were all taken in*; and, to make the pleaſure complete, though the crowd was ſo great, there was no unlucky accident happened, except to two of the noble grooms, one of whom was borne down in the *croſſing*, by the ſuperior ſtrength of a ſervant who rode againſt him, and *ſlipped* his ſhoulder; and the other broke his neck, by his horſe's falling in the running.

It was on a ſporting bet, on one of the by-matches, that I was loſt that evening, to the nobleman, as I ſaid, in whoſe poſſeſſion I happened to remain to the end of the meeting. The next morning, after my new maſter's return to London, he went to pay his court

court to the heir of the crown, who was then at one of his country seats.

CHAP. XV.

Chrysal's master pays his court to a great person, who seems not much to relish his humour, and expresses some unfashionable sentiments concerning polite pleasures. In the course of a regular circulation, Chrysal *comes into the possession of a minister of state, who refuses a friendly offer for very odd reasons. His strange notion of some affairs.*

SOME public occasion had brought a concourse, more than usual in those retirements, to pay their duty to the Prince that morning. As my master was one of the last who came, as soon as his devoirs were ended, some of the company accidentally asked him, what had kept him so late? on which, with an easy air of pleasantry, he answered aloud, that 'He 'had been detained by a very whimsical affair: a 'certain nobleman, (said he), went into company 'last night, so *immensely* drunk, that, having set in 'to play, and lost five thousand pounds, he quite 'forgot it this morning, and refused to pay the mo-'ney, till some person of honour, who was uncon-'cerned in the matter, should vouch his having lost 'it fairly; on which it was referred to me; and 'sorry I am, that I was qualified to give it against 'him.'—'How, my lord, by being a person of ho-'nour!' says the gentleman he spoke to.—'No, '(replied my master, with a significant smile), not 'so neither, but by being unconcerned in winning 'it.'—And then turning short to another, 'But 'have you heard the news, my lord? (said he) 'Mr. —— caught his wife yesterday taking a seri-'ous

'one walk in Kenſington Gardens with the gentle-
'man whom we all know he forbade her keeping
'company with, ſome time ago.'—A ſmile of gene-
ral approbation encouraged him ſo much, that he
concluded with ſaying, 'He wiſhed he had himſelf
'been the happy delinquent ſo taken, as he doubted
'not but the graveſt biſhop on the bench would,
'were he to ſpeak his mind honeſtly.'

The Prince had heard him without interruption; but, as ſoon as he had ended, turning to a nobleman who ſtood near him, 'There can be no greater inſult '(ſaid he, with a determined look and ſolemn accent) 'to a perſon who is appointed to put the laws of a 'country in execution, than for any one to boaſt of a 'breach of thoſe in his preſence. For my part, if I 'am ever called by Providence to that ſtation, it is 'my invariable reſolution, that no man, how exalted 'ſoever in rank, who lives in open violation of any 'law, human or divine, ſhall ever hold employment 'under me, or receive countenance from me.'

This rebuke damped my maſter's ſpirits, as it ſtruck a reverential awe into all preſent. He hung down his head, and in a few moments withdrew, quite abaſhed. But he ſoon recovered, and to ſilence the jeſts of his companions, and ſhew that he was not to be brow-beat out of his own way, he made one with them to ſpend the evening at a brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a beau, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, who paid me into the bank, from whence I was ſent, in the change of a note, to the firſt miniſter of ſtate.

The notion I had hitherto entertained of human politics, made me enter into this ſervice with reluctance; but my prejudice was ſoon removed. My new maſter was juſt coming from his cloſet when I was delivered to him: he ſtopped to count the money; then

then putting it into his purſe, and turning to a clerk, who followed him with a huge bag of papers in his hand,—'I muſt have all theſe finiſhed againſt morning, (ſaid he) that I may be able to read them over, before they are ſigned. I know they are a great many, but the buſineſs requires diſpatch; and diligence and method overcome the greateſt difficulties'—Saying this he went into his drawing-room, which was filled with ſeveral of the moſt eminent members of the community, who came, ſome to conſult, ſome to adviſe, (for he refuſed not the advice of the meaneſt) and all to congratulate him on the ſucceſs of his meaſures.—When the buſineſs and formality of this ſcene were over, the company withdrew, all but one gentleman, who deſired ſome private converſation with my maſter. As ſoon as they were alone, 'I have done myſelf the honour to wait upon you this morning, (ſaid the gentleman) to inform you that there is a vacancy in my borough, and to know whom you would have me return; for as I ſee that all your meaſures are evidently calculated for the good of your country, I am reſolved to ſupport you.'

'I am much obliged to you for your good opinion, (anſwered my maſter) but I am reſolved never to interfere in matters of this nature, nor to attempt influencing the election or vote of any perſon, by any other means than reaſon: all therefore that I have to aſk is, that you will return an honeſt man; while he approves of my conduct, he will certainly ſupport me, and no longer do I wiſh to be ſupported.'

'What, Sir! (replied the gentleman in aſtoniſhment) not deſire to have your friends returned Why, Sir, is it poſſible that you can be a ſtranger to the intrigues that are forming againſt you, by a faction, who, when they had reduced the ſtate to a mere *wreck*, like a cowardly, mutinous crew, flew in the face of their maſter, took the boat, and made

'their escape to shore; and now, when you have not 'only brought her safe into harbour, but also fitted 'her out for another voyage, with every prospect of 'success, are caballing to undermine and turn you 'away from the helm: not that they even pretend 'to arraign your conduct or skill, but just that they 'may have the pillaging the fruits of your labours. 'As this, Sir, is notoriously the case, you must 'excuse the warmth of my honest zeal, when I tell 'you, that I think you must be guilty of very 'strange, very blameable remissness, if you neglect 'any possible method of disappointing their perni-'cious designs.'

'My friend, (returned my master) I am too sen-'sible of the truth of all you say, but hope there is 'no necessity of my having recourse to methods 'which my soul disapproves. Without the assistance 'of any such, did I (to pursue your mode of speech) 'first point out to our master, and the rest of the 'ship's company, the errors in their steering, the 'rocks they were ready to run upon, and the way 'to avoid them. Without any such, did I take the 'helm in that dangerous time, when they fled from 'the wreck, and work'd her out of the breakers 'they left her among; and, without any such, will 'I support my place at the helm, or resign it, 'for, in my opinion, no end can justify improper 'means.

'Shall I own to you, my friend, that your offer 'gives me pain? Do not mistake me; I am sincere-'ly obliged to you for that good opinion which dic-'tated it to your honest heart: but the truth is, 'that any member of the community's having the 'power of making such an offer, proves such a de-'generacy in our constitution, as threatens its over-'throw in the end. A parliament should be a re-'presentative of the people: but how can it be said 'to be that, if the people are not at liberty to choose

'whom

'whom they pleaſe to repreſent them? Beſides, ſuch 'a manner of *nominating*, diſappoints the end, as 'well as it deſtroys the eſſence of a parliament, as 'it is too probable that the nominator ſhall ſtipu-'late conditions with *his* member, that may not only 'take away his power of voting according to the 'dictates of his judgment and conſcience, but alſo 'enjoin ſuch as may be directly oppoſite to both, 'and injurious, if not deſtructive, to that country, 'which he thus *nominally* repreſents. A parliament 'therefore, to be *free*, ſhould be *freely* choſen, no man 'having it in his power to do more than give his own 'vote; and ſuch a parliament, to keep up to the ex-'cellence of its nature in its firſt inſtitution, ſhould 'not continue longer than one ſeſſion; but a new 'one be called as often as the occaſions of the ſtate 'ſhould require it, once in every year at leaſt, for 'ſo often does the intereſt of a nation demand, that 'its guardians ſhould meet. Such a parliament, ſen-'ſible of the ſhortneſs of its duration, and nature of 'the tenure of their power, would take care never 'to act againſt the intereſt of their conſtituents; or, 'if human frailty ſhould err, their time would be 'too ſhort to eſtabliſh the evil, and as it would be 'impoſſible for them to be choſen again, the next 'parliament would remedy the miſchief.—Such 'ſhould a Britiſh parliament be! ſuch I hope it will 'be! It is every honeſt Briton's duty to do ſo; 'nor ſhall any act of mine ever ſeem to countenance 'a practice that contradicts this principle. By 'ſpeaking and acting in ſtrict conformity to the dic-'tates of *my* judgment and conſcience, have I hither-'to ſucceeded, contrary to the apprehenſions of 'many, beyond the expectations of all; and the 'ſame means, and none other, will I ever purſue.'—'Heaven bleſs your pious intentions;' (ſaid the gen-tleman, taking his hand and kiſſing it in a rapture, tears of joy running down his face) 'Heaven will

'bleſs them: happy Sovereign in ſuch a ſervant; 'happy Britain in ſuch a guardian.'—Saying this, he took his leave of my maſter, who went directly to wait upon his.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's ſentiments of his maſter's maſter, who gives a remarkable reaſon for his approbation of his miniſter's meaſures and manner of doing buſineſs. The miniſter's charge to a general, on appointing him to a command. CHRYSAL *enters into the ſervice of the general. Conflict between maternal tenderneſs and glory, in which the latter is triumphant. Strange advice from a mother to her ſon.*

THE firſt view of this auguſt perſon ſtruck me with a reverence, which I had never felt for man before. Man may be deceived in the looks of man; but *we* ſee through all diſguiſe, and read the real character in the heart. Honeſt, benevolent, and humane, the ſocial virtues brightened the royal in his breaſt.—'Sire, (ſaid my maſter, addreſſing him 'with the moſt reſpectful ſincerity) here are the diſ'patches which you ordered me to draw up yeſter'day: ſince I had the honour of your commands 'then, I have received ſome farther intelligence, that 'confirms the juſtice of your reſolutions. Diſap'pointed, but not deterred, by the repulſe which 'they juſtly met with from you, thoſe people have 'the confidence to make a new attempt, and think 'to obtain by menaces, what was refuſed to their 'intreaties; but the event will convince them, that 'it is more difficult to a generous mind to deny the 'ſuppliant, than repulſe the inſolent. Strong in the 'natural ſtrength of your dominions, and ſtronger

'in

'in the love of your people, you are able to assert 'your own cause against all the powers of the world, 'on that element which nature has pointed out for 'the scene of your triumphs; nor will you permit 'any other to interfere with you on it. All you 'require is a neutrality, where you are entitled to 'assistance: This shews your confidence in your own 'strength, and your contempt of them. But even 'this contempt will not overlook any disrespect to 'yourself, any partiality to your enemies. Let 'them either behave themselves as friends, or pro-'fess themselves foes.—This choice is indifferent to 'you. As to their complaints, their own unjust ac-'tions are the cause of them; and when this is re-'moved, they will cease of course. Till then, to 'seek a remission of the punishment, and still persist 'in the crime, is an insult upon justice and mercy; 'and for their menaces, they are beneath the notice 'of an answer.'

'Be it so, (replied the reverend Monarch, the in-'dignation of his honest heart, bursting from his 'eyes); be it so; you speak the sentiments of my 'soul.'—Then turning to a favourite subject, who stood near him, 'It is a pleasure to me to transact business with 'this man, (continued he); he makes me understand 'him, and does not perplex my soul with a vain 'maze of timorous wiles, but speaks and acts with 'open honesty and boldness.'—The honour of this testimony warmed the heart of my master with a joy, that overpaid his labours, and added new fire to the assiduity of his soul. As soon as he went home, he found a person waiting for him, whom he had appoint-ed to meet him, on an affair of the greatest import-ance.—'I have sent for you, my friend, (said my 'master), on an occasion, which, I am sensible, will 'give joy to your heart. You are to command a se-'parate body of troops, which have been sent to pro-'secute this necessary and just war in America. I

'need

'need not put myſelf nor you to the pain of repeating the cauſes of the ſhameful inactivity, to give it no ſeverer name, by which this war has been drawn 'into ſuch a length: you know, and will avoid them. 'You will not wear out opportunity, in making unneceſſary preparations for improbable occaſions: 'you will not damp the ardour of your ſoldiers by 'delay, nor prolong a burthenſome war, to enrich 'yourſelf with the ſpoils of your country. You are 'young, active, and brave: ſuch a commander only 'do Britiſh ſoldiers want, to lead them to victory. 'You have no ſenior, no ſuperior here, to reſtrain 'the efforts of your ſpirit, by timid caution; at the 'ſame time that your judgment will ſupply the place 'of experience, and prevent your falling into the 'misfortunes which ſelf-ſufficient brutal raſhneſs has 'made ſo fatal to others. Your inſtructions are 'comprized in a few words;—make the beſt uſe your 'judgment ſhall direct you, of the forces entruſted to 'your command, to defend the property, and avenge 'the wrongs of your fellow ſubjects, and to vindicate the honour of this abuſed nation.—I know 'whom I ſpeak to, and therefore I ſay no more: 'proceed, my friend, my ſoldier; anſwer my expectations, and you will fulfil the wiſhes of your country.'—Saying thus, he embraced him tenderly; and, as he went with him to the door, happening to look into the ſtreet, he ſaw a number of diſabled ſoldiers, who had placed themſelves before his window, to ſolicit relief for their miſeries.—'O, my friend, (continued he, graſping his hand), behold thoſe victims 'of the unjuſt ambition of that enemy, againſt whom 'you go; and let the fight add the wings of an eagle 'to your haſte, to tear down a power, which has 'been thus fatal to ſo many of your brave countrymen, to prevent any more from ſuffering the like 'evils from the ſame cauſe.—The man who does 'not uſe, to the beſt advantage, the means entruſt-

'ed

'ed to him by his country, to deſtroy its enemies, is 'guilty of all the evils which thoſe enemies may af-'terwards do to his country.—Shall I beg a fa-'vour of my friend? Diſtribute this money (giving 'him an handful of guineas) among thoſe men, as 'from yourſelf. If it is not enough to give each a 'guinea; I will be your debtor for what is wanting; 'if it is more, keep the reſidue in your hands, to ap-'ply to the ſame uſe, on the firſt occaſion you meet. 'This much will relieve their real wants, and more 'might only tempt them to exceſs. The invidiouſ-'neſs of my ſtation makes it improper for me to do 'even an act of virtue, which may be miſtaken for 'oſtentation. Adieu, my friend: Heaven guard 'you in the day of battle, and guide your ſword to 'victory.'

I here quitted the ſervice of this great man, the inſtances of whoſe conduct which I have given, make any farther character of him unneceſſary.

The regard with which the miniſter had addreſſed himſelf to my preſent maſter, raiſed my curioſity to take an immediate view of his heart, as I knew not but I might leave his poſſeſſion directly: but my fears were agreeably diſappointed; for the number of guineas, given to him by my maſter, exceeding that of the objects to whom we were to be diſtributed, it fell to my lot to remain a little longer with him.

The honour of his new command, and the confidence with which it was entruſted to him, warmed his heart with the moſt exalted joy. He executed his charitable commiſſion, and then went directly home, where, bending his knee to his beloved mother, and kiſſing her hand in rapture; 'O, madam, '(ſaid he), congratulate your happy ſon: My pray-'ers at length are heard, and I am bleſſed with an 'opportunity of proving to the world my attach-'ment to the ſervice, my ardour for the glory of my 'country: I am honoured with a ſeparate command

'in

'in America, where Heaven fires my soul with an 'assurance, that I shall have the happiness of crush-'ing the injurious power of our enemies, in the very 'place where it first attacked my country; where it 'has too long triumphed in its wrongs.'

'Heaven bless my son,' (replied the matron, as soon as a gush of tears of joy and tenderness permitted her to speak); 'Heaven guard my son, and bless 'his pious hopes. Let me only live to see him return 'with the honour of having done his duty, and I 'shall die contented. But why do I say this, as if 'my heart felt a doubt for him? *my* son will never 'fail to do his duty; he will never fall from the 'paths of honour, however dangerous, nor seek to 'colour over, with specious arguments, the loss of 'his honour. He will not make his mother asham-'ed of having born him, nor bring her gray hairs 'with disgrace and sorrow to the grave. I know the 'instructions which have formed his youth, I know 'the principles of his heart, I know my own blood 'better.—But, O my son! remember also, that pru-'dence distinguishes true courage from rashness; that 'your country has now a peculiar interest in your 'life, and that you betray its trust, if you lose it by 'any unnecessary boldness. Remember your aged 'mother, who hangs weeping over her grave, till 'you return. Remember your———

'O, my mother, no more! recal not ideas, which 'my present situation requires me to forget. Fear 'not: your son will not be a disgrace to the honest 'race from which he is sprung. He will do his duty 'as a soldier, a British soldier, and as a man, sensible 'of the obligations of reason and religion. Whether 'I shall ever have the happiness of kissing this hand 'again, is only known to Heaven; but it is in my 'power to promise, that the name of your son shall 'never raise a blush in the face of his mother, nor his 'actions require the palliation of excuse from his

'friends.

'friends. If life is to be ſhort, let it be well filled; 'one day of glory is better than an age of idleneſs or 'diſhonour. Adieu, my mother; your bleſſing is a 'ſhield to the head, a ſupport to the ſoul of your 'ſon: one tender parting more, and then my heart 'muſt be reſigned to other cares.'—'Heaven bleſs! 'Heaven guard my ſon!' and then, as he went from her, 'O glory! what a tribute doſt thou exact from 'wretched mortals!"

My maſter paufed a moment, to wipe away the pious tear which filial duty owed to ſuch a parting, and then haſted to another ſcene of equal tenderneſs.

Mutual merit had improved the inſtinctive liking of youth, between my maſter and a young lady, whoſe elevated rank and large fortune were her leaſt recommendations, into the ſtrongeſt attachment of real love. As reaſon could make no objection on either ſide, parental approbation gave its ſanction to their happy choice, and had encouraged virgin timidity to appoint the day that was to ſeal their bliſs. Hard taſk upon a favourite lover, to communicate to the choſen of his ſoul, the order which was to damp riſing expectation, by this delay, and tear him from the inſtant hope of that happineſs which he had ſo long been ſuing for. But honour, and the ſervice of his country, demanded this fiery trial, to prepare him for that height of glory to which his ſoul aſpired.

CHAP. XVII.

Another ſcene of tenderneſs. Love and honour in the old-faſhioned romantic ſtyle. CHRYSAL *quits the ſervice of the general, and, after ſome few common changes, enters into that of honeſt Aminadab. Concluſion of Aminadab's agency for her Grace.*

AS ſoon as he had recovered from the ſoftneſs into which his mother's tenderneſs had melted him,

him, he went directly to his miſtreſs. She received him with the freedom proper in their preſent ſituation, but ſoon perceived an alteration in his countenance, that ſhowed her his heart was not at eaſe. This alarmed her tender fears. 'What (ſaid ſhe, 'looking earneſtly at him) can make a troubled gloom 'overcaſt that face, where hope and happineſs have, 'for ſome time, brightened every ſmile? Can any 'thing have happened to diſturb the proſpect ſo 'pleaſing to us? Can you feel a grief that you think 'me unworthy, or unable to ſhare with you? It muſt 'be ſo; that faint, that laboured ſmile, betrays the 'ſickneſs of your heart.'

'O deareſt wiſh of that heart, (replied he, taking 'her hand, and kiſſing it in ecſtaſy), how ſhall I 'merit ſuch perfection? It is impoſſible: I am unworthy: but let my ſoul thank Heaven for bleſſing 'it with this opportunity of riſing nearer to a level 'with your virtues; an hope that will ſoften the ſeverity of abſence, and make the delay of happineſs 'ſeem ſhorter.'

'What canſt thou mean? (ſaid ſhe, a jealous doubt 'alarming her delicacy)——'Delay! I underſtand 'thee not—I urge not'——'Miſtake not, O my 'love, the inconſiſtencies which anguiſh extorts from 'my bleeding heart—How can I ſay it!—Our happineſs is delayed;—delayed, but to be more exalted—Honour, the ſervice of my country calls.'—'And am I to be left?'—'But for a time, a little 'time, the pain of which ſhall be overpaid by the 'joy of meeting, never to part again.—O ſpare my 'heart, reſtrain thoſe tears; I am not worthy, I am 'not proof to ſuch a trial.—The intereſt, the glory 'of my country demand my ſervice; and my gracious maſter has honoured me with a ſtation, in 'which my endeavours may be effectual to accompliſh his commands—nay, muſt be effectual, where 'love urges duty, where you are the ineſtimable re-

'ward.'

'ward.'—'If that reward is all you ſeek, why do 'you fly from it? My fortune is amply ſufficient. 'Quit then the dangerous paths of ambition, and let 'us retire, and ſeek true happineſs in content.'—'O ſpare my ſtruggling heart! what can I, ſhall I 'do?—The trial is too great for human fortitude. 'Aſſiſt me, glory! help, O my country! ſupport me 'through this conflict, and I ſhall triumph over eve-'ry other difficulty and danger. I go, my love, but 'to deſerve thee.'—'Go! go! and Heaven guide 'and guard your ſteps!' (waving her hand, and turning from him to hide her tears); 'I ſhall no 'longer ſtruggle with the ſacred impulſe that leads 'you on to glory.'—Then turning to him, 'But 'remember how you leave me! think what I feel till 'you return!—What I muſt be, ſhould'——The horror of this thought made her unable to ſay more; he flew into her arms, and, mingling his tears with hers, as her head reclined upon his boſom, in the tenderneſs of a chaſte embrace, 'This is too much, '(ſaid he); this is too much.—I can never repay 'this exceſs of goodneſs.'—Then, breaking from her arms, in a kind of enthuſiaſm——'Heaven gives my 'ſoul (continued he) this foretaſte of happineſs, as 'an earneſt of ſucceſs: I go to certain victory: the 'prayers of angels muſt prevail.'—Saying theſe words, he ruſhed out of the room, leaving her half dead with grief. Nor was he in a much happier ſtate, the thought of parting from her damping the ardour that had enabled him to give that proof of his reſolution, and obliging nature to pay the tribute of a flood of tears to ſuch a ſacrifice.

But glory, and the intereſt of his country, ſoon diſſipated this cloud; and his mind, freed from the dread of ſuch painful ſcenes of tenderneſs, reſumed its wonted vigour, and entered upon the cares of his great undertaking with the moſt indefatigable aſſiduity. But I continued not in his poſſeſſion, to ſee the

effects of these cares; such objects as I was designed for, occurred too frequently, to the first of whom it fell to my lot to be given. I told you, that I took a view of his heart. Never was honour more firmly established on the principles of virtue, than there. To select any one instance, would be injustice to the rest. All was uniformly great and good.

My next master was one of the pillars of military glory, who had contributed a leg, an arm, and the scalp of his head, to raise the trophies of the *French* in *America*. Though he was destitute of almost every comfort which nature really stands in need of, his first care, on the acquisition of such a treasure as I was to him, was to gratify the artificial wants of luxury. He went directly to a gin-shop, where he *changed* me for a quartern of that liquid fire, the taste of which was too pleasing to his palate, and the warmth too comfortable to his heart, for him to be satisfied with so little. Quartern followed quartern, till every sense was intoxicated, and he fell *dead drunk* on the floor; when his good-natured host had him kindly laid, to sleep off his debauch, on the next dunghill, first taking care to prevent his fellow inhabitants of the streets from robbing him of the rest of his treasure, by picking his pocket of it himself.—The scenes I saw in this service, were all of the same kind; but I was soon relieved from the pain of them, my master giving me, as a present, to an officer of the customs that very night.—By this faithful steward of the public, I was, next morning, given by the factor to a gang of smugglers, to be laid out for him in *Flanders* lace, whither he was just going, on the affairs of his profession. With this industrious trader I went as far as *Harwich*, where, while they waited for the tide, he lost me at a game of cribbage, to a person who was going over with him.

My new master was *honest Aminadab*, her Grace's agent, whom I have mentioned to you before. As soon

soon as they had done playing, my master took a walk upon the beach with a person who strongly resembled him, and whom I found to be his son. 'I wish (said the father) that we were safe at our journey's end; for, though I have planned matters so well, that I think there can be no danger, the immense consequence at stake must make me anxious.'—'I do not understand you, (replied the son); I thought this was but such a journey as I have often known you to take, and that you were going no farther than *Holland*, on some business of her Grace's.'—'She thinks so indeed, (returned the father); nor would I have her think otherwise as yet; but I do not design ever to see her face more. I am now, my son, arrived at the height of my wishes, being possessed of wealth beyond my most sanguine hopes. For you must know, that, having gained the confidence of this woman by many services, I at length suggested it to her, that the best way for her to make the most profit of the great wealth she has amassed, would be to send it to *Holland* by some trusty person, who should bring it over again from thence, to save appearances, and subscribe it here, in some fictitious name, to the supplies given for the defence of *Germany*, now that hers, and the intrigues of some other great persons, had baffled the schemes of œconomy which the managers had attempted in vain to establish, and obliged them to come into our own terms.—She took the hint, for it was a most plausible one, and immediately insisted that I should negociate the affair for her, giving me one hundred thousand pounds for that purpose.

'This was what I wanted, and had been always scheming for, having ever remitted my money, as fast as I could make any, into *Holland*, that I might be able to seize such an happy opportunity as this at a moment's warning.'—'But you cannot think, father, of staying in *Holland*. You will be imme-

diately purſued thither.'—'In *Holland*, fool! no, nor in the ſmoke of *Europe* at all: I deſign to ſet out for *Africa*, without a moment's loſs; and hope to be far enough out of her reach, or that of any Chriſtian power, before ſhe can ſuſpect any thing of my flight: and it will heighten the pleaſure of my ſucceſs to think, that, while I am ſailing to a land of circumciſion, ſhe will ſit in anxious expectation of my return.'

'But, father, is it not injuſtice to deceive her confidence, and rob her of ſo great a ſum of money?'

'Injuſtice, fool! injuſtice to a Chriſtian! Say ſuch another word, and I diſcard you, diſclaim you for ever! thy converſe with theſe *Gentiles* has debauched thy faith. What do we mix with them, what do we ſerve them, what do we bear their abominations, their inſults for, but to make our own advantage of them? Fools! vain preſumptuous fools! to imagine that any benefits, any gratitude can bind us to them, or change the innate hatred of our ſouls to a ſect that has been the cauſe of our diſperſion and ruin. But, to ſilence any weak ſcruples about injuſtice, with a word, have I not the authority of our holy Scripture, the example of our great prophet *Moſes* himſelf for what I do, who borrowed the wealth of the *Egyptians* without a deſign of ever returning them, to pay the children of *Iſrael* for the labours they had been put to by their oppreſſors, and enrich them when they ſhould arrive at the land of promiſe?—And is not this my caſe? have I not laboured hourly for this Gentile woman without payment? Did ſhe not join to defraud our people of a greater ſum than this, to which my mite was added too, under the pretence of procuring us a ſettlement? And did ſhe not refuſe to return it, when the attempt failed of ſucceſs? What then is this, but a juſt retaliation? a fulfilling of our law, that ſays, *An eye for an eye,*

and

'and a tooth for a tooth? And I do not want her wealth 'to make my settlement happy in the land of my 'forefathers.'—The son had too high a reverence for the judgment of his father to offer any reply, but yielded to the conviction of arguments so conclusive. By this time, the wind and tide served us; we arrived in *Holland* without any thing remarkable, except I should take notice to you of the sordid hypocrisy of my master as such, who, not to violate the customs of his race, made a pretence of poverty, to get his passage without expence.

CHAP. XVIII.

They arrive at the HAGUE. *Political conversation between a* DUTCHMAN *and a* JEW. *They differ in opinion.* AMINADAB *leaves his friend* VAN HOGAN *in great distress.*

AS soon as we arrived at the *Hague*, my master set his son to prepare for their immediate departure, while he went himself, for a moment, to speak to one of the principal members of the States.

There was little ceremony between a Dutchman and a Jew; but, entering directly upon business, 'My 'friend *Aminadab*, (said his *mightiness*), I am glad 'to see you; I hope you have brought us good 'news, and that there is a stop put to the insolence 'of those *English* pirates, who, in a manner, block 'up our ports, and have almost ruined our trade.'

'Really, my friend *Van Hogan*, (replied my master), I am sorry that. I cannot give you any satisfactory account of that affair: for such is the perverseness of the people in power there at present, 'that they will not listen to any arguments.'—'Will they not take money?'—'No, indeed; nor

'does the boldeſt of us all know how to offer it with 'ſafety, it was rejected with ſuch indignant rage the 'laſt time, though, in truth, the offer was a tempt- 'ing one. I have ſeen the day, and that not very 'long ſince, when half that ſum would have done 'twice as much. But matters are moſt ſtrangely al- 'tered of late. They have got a manager who nei- 'ther drinks, nor games, keeps running horſes, nor 'whores, nor lives above his private fortune, and 'therefore has not ſuch preſſing demands for money, 'as uſed to make our negociations go on ſo ſmoothly 'with others formerly.'

'Death! what ſhall we do? Is the whole court cor- 'rupted by this example? are they all infected with 'ſuch a ſtrange madneſs?'

'No, it has not gone ſo far as that yet; and it is 'to be hoped, that the example of a few will not be 'able to do ſo much; and that when the novelty of 'his humour wears off a little, it will go out of 'faſhion inſenſibly, and things return to their old 'courſe. This is ſuppoſing the worſt, that the en- 'gines, now at work to overturn this new *ſet*, ſhould 'miſcarry.'

'But what muſt we do in the mean time? We 'ſhall be ruined before that may happen: we muſt 'declare war, and do ourſelves juſtice.'

'But may not the remedy there be worſe than 'the diſeaſe? Are your affairs in ſuch a condition 'as to entitle you to take ſuch a ſtep? Conſider 'what a mighty naval force they have at this time! 'conſider how you will be able to reſiſt it.'

'That is the thing, the only thing that has kept 'us quiet ſo long! But ſomething muſt be done; 'another AMBOYNA affair, or ſome ſuch ſtroke, muſt 'bring us ſatisfaction, and revenge too.'

'Take care, my friend; be cautious what you do: 'this is no time for ſuch ſtrokes: nor are the preſent 'governors ſuch people as thoſe, who ſuffered them

'ſo

'so tamely: they will be apt to return the ſtroke, 'in a manner that may be attended with conſe- 'quences too dreadful to be hazarded. I hate thoſe 'haughty Iſlanders as much as you: except ſome 'few particulars, the ſenſe of the whole nation has 'ever been againſt us; nor would they ſuffer us a- 'mong them now, but that we have availed our- 'ſelves ſo well of the favour of thoſe few, as to get 'the command of almoſt all the money in the king- 'dom into our own hands, ſo that now they dare 'not provoke us too far; though I own I do ſuſ- 'pect that the deſign of the preſent rulers, is to 'get out of our power as ſoon as this war is 'over, if our old friends do not counteract their 'deſigns.'

'But, all this time, this talking ſignifies nothing to 'our affairs; what do they ſay to them? What 'reaſons do they give for encouraging theſe out- 'rages, in breach of treaties, and contempt of 'juſtice?

'In truth, my friend, a great many, that are 'more juſt than agreeable; more eaſily exclaimed a- 'gainſt, than refuted. In anſwer to your alleging 'the faith of treaties, they inſiſt that they ſtrictly 'obſerve the ſenſe and ſpirit of them, while you on- 'ly cavil about the words, it being abſurd to think 'that any nation ſhould bind up its own hands, in 'the manner you pretend; or, even if that was the 'meaning of the treaty, at the time when it was 'made, that your abuſe of the indulgence given by 'it, makes it neceſſary to retract it now: and they 'expreſs the moſt indignant ſurpriſe at your inſiſting 'ſo ſtrongly upon one article, which at beſt is but 'doubtful, and would be in itſelf abſurd, in the ſenſe 'you wreſt it to, while you break through ſo many, 'the meaning of which you do not pretend even to 'diſpute.'

'They

'Then we will dispute no longer about them; we 'will enforce their observation, by the same methods 'that originally obtained them.'—'Aye, if that 'could be; but, my friend, I cannot flatter you; I 'am afraid those means are out of your power; you 'were then really *mighty states*, respectable for your 'power, and dreadful for you valour; but the case 'is now altered, I need not say how.'

'Ingrateful ENGLISH! to forget how we rescued 'them from popery and slavery, but the other day: 'had it not been for us, they would, at best, have been 'but slaves to FRANCE.'

'The very charge they make against you, who, 'they say, could never have resisted the power of 'Spain, or established your liberties, if their queen 'Elizabeth had not hearkened to the cries of *your* 'poor *distressed states*. As for the affair you mention, 'though they do not deny the benefit, they take 'off from the obligation, by attributing it to self-'interested motives; as they say you were convin-'ced, that if any thing happened to them, you 'must sink of course: beside, that you have been 'amply paid for this, by the immense expence of 'blood and treasure with which they established your 'barrier, in the late wars, which they evidently en-'tered into on your accounts, to the neglect of their 'own interest.

'In a word, my friend, there is so much truth in 'what they say, that I would not advise you to in-'sist upon these points any more.'—'Confound the 'points! and the memories that rip them up so! 'What shall we do! I myself lost a ship last week, 'worth fifty thousand ducats; though all the 'precautions possible were taken; as, sending her 'papers by another ship, supplying her with false 'bills of lading, false clearances, false consign-'ments; in short, every thing that human heart 'could devise."

'And

'And I know she was as well sworn for, to prevent 'her being condemned, as human conscience could 'swear; but nothing could elude the captors, or de-'ceive or influence the judges.—But she was not in-'sured?'

'Not a ducat; there is nothing to be got by in-'suring, except the ships are to be cast away: O my 'ship! my ship! I will have war.'—'And then all 'your ships go at once.'—'I am distracted, what 'shall we do?'

'My friend, the best, the only advice I can give 'you, is to put a stop to this trade, and open your 'eyes to your true interest. I hate the *English*, as 'much as you possibly can; but that should not 'make me ruin myself to be revenged on them: they 'are your only natural allies; they first delivered, 'they still sustain you; nor can you support the 'very name of an independent state without them. 'Provoke them not, therefore, too far; I wonder 'how they have borne so much already: preserve 'a fair neutrality; they despise your assistance, and 'desire no more: nor by your avarice force them 'to measures that must end in your ruin. If you 'break with them, whom will you apply to? 'The *French* have given you many proofs, that 'they wait only for an opportunity to enslave you: '*Spain* has at length learned its own interest, and 'will not break with the only power, whose friend-'ship can be of real service to it: and this very war 'gives a sufficient demonstration of *Austrian* faith 'and gratitude.

'This is the obvious situation of things, and must 'strike a person at the first view: but a moment's 'thought will shew them, even in a stronger light. 'For, to grant that *France* and *Austria* both may be 'sincere in their professions to you; does not reason 'shew you the imprudence of trusting to promises 'which it is more than probable they will not be able

'to

'to perform? For if you will but diveſt yourſelf of 'paſſion and prejudice for a moment, you will ſee 'that the meaſures entered upon, and the means uſ-'ed to carry them on, by the *Engliſh* at this time, 'muſt, in all human appearance, diſappoint the 'ſchemes of their enemies, and retort upon their own 'heads, the ruin they meditated for others. In-'deed the proſpect is ſuch, that it is impoſſible to 'ſay where things will end: every interior fund is 'exhauſted; every external reſource cut off; their 'own trade is abſolutely ruined; the treaſures of '*Spain*, which ſupplied them in their laſt wars, are 'no longer at their command; ſo that I can foreſee 'nothing leſs than their becoming bankrupts, not 'only to themſelves, but alſo to every foreign ſtate, 'and individual, whoſe avarice of preſent gain has 'made them ſupply their wants.

'Nor is this diſtreſs the effect of chance, or of 'an unfortunate campaign, which the ſucceſs of 'another, or ſome lucky hit, may reſtore. It is 'the natural conſequence of a ſyſtem of meaſures, 'plann'd with judgment, and proſecuted with vig-'our, by a miniſter who will not fail to improve 'it to the moſt ſolid advantage. And this I ſay, 'not ſolely from my own opinion. You know I 'have had connections with perſons able to give me 'the beſt information, by the aſſiſtance of which 'I have traced the progreſs of theſe affairs with a-'ſtoniſhment: and therefore, as *England* has thus at 'length ſhewn a ſuperiority in council, the uſual re-'ſource of patching up a good peace, at the end of 'an unſucceſsful war, ſeems alſo to be precluded 'from them.

'As for the houſe of *Auſtria*, it has ever been a 'dead weight upon its friends, though its infatuated 'ingratitude to *England*, which had been in a man-'ner its ſole ſupport for near a century, will prob-'ably prevent any other ſtate from undertaking ſuch

'a burthen,

a burthen, ſo that it muſt ſink back into its original obſcurity and barbariſm.

'Thus you ſee, my friend, that depending upon *France*, is leaning on a broken reed; and truſting to *Auſtria*, going for ſhelter under a falling wall. What then can you do if the *Engliſh* ſhould take offence at your behaviour, and exert that power which is in their hands, to puniſh your avaricious partiality to their enemies?

'Your power is, in every inſtance, contemptible; your navy is gone abſolutely to decay; your land forces are filled with old men and children; your officers, who might have ſerved you, have been obliged to enter into other ſervices for bread, to make room for ignorant, indolent, puſillanimous burghers who barter their votes for ſuch a ſhare of the ſpoils of the public. Your finances are in the loweſt ſtate of embarraſſment; your public ſpirit, your valour, your virtue, all ſwallowed up by ſelfiſhneſs, and ſordid love of gain; every thing in the ſituation that ſeems to invite ruin, if it is not ſpeedily prevented; and that can poſſibly be done no other way, than as I have mentioned: for, as I have ſaid, and muſt again repeat, things are now on a footing there that you do not ſeem to be properly aware of. The people are ſenſible of their own ſtrength; their governors exert it properly, and there is a mutual confidence between them, that in a manner inſures ſucceſs to their attempts. Conſider this fair, this friendly repreſentation of real facts, and you will ſoon ſee the improbability of their bearing with you any longer; or ſuffering you to defeat the end of their military efforts, by carrying on the trade of their enemies, and ſo enabling them to continue the war.'

'Is it come to this? Are the friends, on whom we depended moſt, turned againſt us? Are you an advocate for our enemies, and would perſuade us to

'give

'give up the moſt advantageous branch of trade we have?'

'Why will you let your paſſion blind you thus? I have told you before, and repeat it again, that of all chriſtians I hate the *Engliſh* moſt, becauſe they reſemble us leaſt; as I love the *Dutch* moſt, as you come neareſt to ourſelves, both in practice and profeſſion. But *my* paſſions never blind *me!* and therefore I ſpeak the dictates of reaſon; I plead not for them, nor will I flatter you.'

'Notwithſtanding all their boaſted power, we have one ſtroke left to humble them; and we will make it directly; we will draw all our money out of their funds.'

'Will you ſo? at a third part loſs? O *Moſes!* what fools are thoſe chriſtians? Do you not ſee that even this ſtroke, as you call it, is guarded againſt? that, apprehenſive of ſuch an attempt, they have lowered the particular funds in which your money chiefly lies, ſo far, that the loſs of ſelling out now would be intolerable? And whoſe is this money which you would draw out? the property of private people: abſurd thought! if it was the money of the public, it would not be ſtrange to ſee it ſacrificed to private intereſt; but there is no inſtance, in all your hiſtory, of private property being given up voluntarily for the redreſs of public wrongs.

'Friend *Hogan*, I am in haſte: my affairs call me elſewhere; when I ſhall ſee you again, is uncertain; but my regard would not permit me to miſs this opportunity of giving you my advice, which I know to be of importance to you. I can no longer undertake your *affairs* in *London*: nor would I have another amuſe you with hopes that muſt deceive you in the end: while it was in my power to ſerve you, I did: I abuſed their confidence; I betrayed their ſecrets to you: but I can do it no longer; nor can

any

any other to effect. Measures, as well as men, are changed.—Adieu.'

With these words my master went to seek his son, leaving his friend *Van Hogan* in the highest distraction, between the opposite impulses of the strongest passions that could agitate his soul, avarice and fear.

CHAP. XIX.

Aminadab bids adieu to her Grace, and sails with his son for Africa. Chrysal *remains with a* Dutch *banker. The principles and conscience of a good* Dutchman. Chrysal *is sent into* Germany. *His opinion of the* Dutch.

THE young *Israelite* met his father punctually, and gave him such an account of his preparations for their flight, that *Aminadab* blessed the God of his fathers; and, to complete the fulness of his harvest with whatever gleanings he could pick up, he went directly among his *Dutch* friends, and, in pious imitation of the example he had quoted before, borrowed, if not *jewels of gold and jewels of silver*, as much coined gold and silver as he could, and then going with his son to the sea-side, they embarked for their native country, in all the exultation of successful villany.

But I went not with them: my *British* shape being of more value in *Europe* than where he was going, my master left *me* with his banker, in exchange for the more fashionable coin of *Spain*, which neighbourhood made better known there.—My *Hebrew* master had scarce left the banker into whose hands he had given me, when in came his *Belgic* friend *Van Hogan*, all aghast at the news he had received.

ceived from him, and something else which had come to his knowledge since.

'O *Mynheer!* (said he), we are all blown up and undone; the flood is pouring in upon us.'—'What is the matter now, *Mynheer* (replied the banker), that throws you into this strange consternation? The worms have not destroyed the dams, nor an earthquake swallowed up the spice islands?'

'Worse, worse if possible than even these. Those stubborn, proud, self-sufficient *English* have refused to release our ships that were taken carrying ammunition and provisions to their enemies, so that we are like not only to lose those ships, but also the advantage of the trade for the future. What can be done to divert this blow?'—'Really, *Mynheer*, I cannot tell; the case is bad enough, to be sure; but it is no more than was to be expected; it was not to be thought that they should always remain such passive fools, as tamely to look on, while we supplied their enemies with necessaries to carry on the war against them, without endeavouring to put a stop to us.'

'Death! I am almost mad to hear you talk thus! But say what you will, my *Province* shall never bear it. Why, I have received advice this minute, that our ships which were freighted for their enemies will be condemned, and that they are as little moved at our menaces as they were at our entreaties. If this continues, we shall not have a ship left in the *Texel*.'—'Nay, mine shall escape, I'm resolved.'—'What will you do to save 'em?'—'Not run them into the danger, *Mynheer*.'—'How, give up the trade?'—'Most certainly, since it cannot be carried on with safety any longer; and glad that I have come off so well.'—'I do not understand you.'—'You are too warm, *Mynheer*, too sanguine in the pursuit of your projects. While the surprize or fright of the late managers in *England*

'gave

'gave me reaſon to think that they would not ven-
'ture to interrupt us, I carried on as large a trade
'in this way as any other; but as ſoon as I ſaw the
'people recover their ſenſes, and the reins put in-
'to other hands, I made a timely retreat with what
'I had acquired.'—'And what do you intend to do
'now?'—'Keep fair with thoſe whom I can get
'nothing by breaking with, and throw my buſineſs
'into another channel; by which management I
'have already ſucceeded ſo far, that I have got the
'*Britiſh* remittances to the parties engaged in the
'preſent war.'—'Why, there may be ſomething in
'this; and if one ſcheme fails, I believe I will even
'follow your example.'—'And pray what is that,
'*Mynheer?*'—'No more than the old cry of piracy;
'but this is ſo laid, that it can hardly fail of ſucceſs.
'We have bribed the captain of an *Engliſh* privateer
'to rifle a ſhip that we prepare properly for the pur-
'poſe, and then to come into the way of one of our
'men of war, which is to take him and bring him in,
'where he is to inſult the government, and vindicate
'his outrages on the pretence of authority.'

'And pray, *Mynheer*, what can you propoſe from
'all this, beſide having the fooliſh villain hanged?'

'Why, the *Engliſh*, in deteſtation of ſuch villany,
'will give up the point of ſearching our ſhips, when
'they ſee their authority abuſed in ſuch a manner,
'and we ſhall gain our end that way; or, if they do
'not, our own people will be ſo enraged at the in-
'ſult and injuſtice (as they will believe) of their
'proceeding, that they will immediately declare war
'againſt them; and ſo we ſhall obtain it the other.
'The pirate, when he has ſerved our turn, we are to
'let eſcape; and it will be no great loſs to the
'world if half a ſcore of his crew are hanged.'

'A very juſt and public-ſpirited ſcheme indeed!
'to hang wretches for a crime you hire them to
'commit, and engage your country in a war that

'must be its ruin, to support your pretensions to an 'unjustifiable trade.

'*Mynheer Van Hogan*, I am a Dutchman as well 'as you, and attached to my interest, as every 'Dutchman is; but that is, when *my* interest is not 'destructive of itself in the end, as I must tell you, I 'think your present scheme is, in which I will be no 'farther concerned than to try to prevent the evil 'consequences of it to the state: the rest may ly 'upon your own head.

'Any thing in the way of trade, my conscience 'complies with without scruple. I can take every 'oath that every officer in the customs in *Europe* can 'impose, and not think myself bound by any of 'them, farther than they agree with my interest: I 'can supply the enemies of my country with arms to 'fight against ourselves, provided they pay a price 'extraordinary, that will defray my taxes toward 'the support of the war: I can receive circumcision, 'stroke down my beard, and swear by *Mahomet*, to 'avoid a tax at *Smyrna*: I can trample on the cross, 'deny *Christ*, and call myself a *Dutchman*, to obtain 'leave to trade in *Japan*; but I will not cut the 'dykes to drown a rat at home.

'I am not at leisure to say more on this subject, 'as I am this minute going to remit a subsidy to one 'of the *German* princes whom *England* keeps in pay 'to fight for their own preservation, from the same 'principles that it has long fought our battles, and 'would again, if we did not provoke it too far. 'And when this is done, I am to meet the *French* 'ambassador to settle terms with him, for remitting 'the money that is to pay the army which fights 'against the allies of *England*. So that you see I 'am engaged, as you may be, if your warmth, un-'natural to the cool temper of our country, will let 'you open your eyes to your true interest.'

Mynheer

Mynheer Van Hogan departed, rather silenced than satisfied with the reasoning of my master, who sat down to negociate the *hire* of a principality, with as much unconcern as he would that of a turnip field, and bought and sold the inhabitants with as great indifference as if he would have bargained for a cask of herrings; in which service it fell to my lot to be employed.

Greatly as I must have edified by the examples and principles, mercantile, moral, civil, and religious of my late master, I must own there was something so grossly reprobate to every sense of real virtue even in him, that I was pleased to leave him, and indeed, to be candid, the country in general, where the very profession of virtue was despised, their only pretension to it being the absence of one vice, hypocrisy, which they rejected as an unnecessary incumbrance, and acted their grossest enormities without reserve or appearance of shame.

I now entered on the great theatre of the world, where the sovereign actors give a dignity to the scenes, and the concerns of individuals were overwhelmed and lost in the confusion of nations.

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL's *remarks on military glory in his journey. Two strange passengers taken into the boat. National prejudices and pride break out in persons not likely to be suspected for such passions.*

WHILE I was travelling to my destined master, I had frequent opportunities of seeing the fruits of military glory, in the misery of the people, and desolation of the countries through which I went.

Such ſcenes as theſe cannot be made known by deſcription to an inhabitant of this happy iſland, whoſe ſituation defends it from the ſudden inroads of foreign enemies, as its natural naval ſtrength does from the more deliberate devaſtations of regular invaſion, and the excellency of its laws from the yet ſeverer outrages of arbitrary power.

But amid all this happineſs, ſuch is the infatiate ingratitude of the human heart, that, not content with theſe bleſſings, you are ever complaining, ever graſping at more, till, in the end, you loſe the enjoyment of what you poſſeſs, inſenſible that your ſevereſt wants would be abundance to millions who dare not even utter a complaint.

It has been ſaid, that there is a certain degree of madneſs requiſite to make a great man; that is, to enable humanity to conquer its firſt principle of ſelf-preſervation, to ſlight the moſt terrifying dangers, and ſeek the moſt ſevere evils that interrupt its purſuit of an imaginary good.

The luſt of power, and the intoxication of glory, may ſeem to animate the great to this contradiction of nature; but madneſs alone can ſupport the maſs of mankind through it, who are inſenſible to theſe fantaſtic motives, or at leaſt cannot delude themſelves with the faineſt hope of ever obtaining them.

Of this I ſaw many inſtances in my journey through the countries that were the ſcene of the preſent war; but one more particularly, that happened in one of the *Dutch* travelling boats early in our journey, made the ſtrongeſt impreſſion on me, and deſerves relation moſt.—There had been an obſtinate battle fought ſome time before between the parties then at war, in which the loſs was ſo ſevere, and ſo equal on both ſides, that as ſoon as night covered their retreat, each withdrew, concluding itſelf vanquiſhed, though next morning, when they came to a better knowledge of each other's ſituation, they both claimed the victory, while

while neither thought proper to return to the charge to assert that claim.

This uncertainty aggravated the misery of the unhappy wretches who were left wounded on the field of battle, as it prevented their receiving relief, either from friend or enemy. However, as this dreadful scene was acted in the neighbourhood of a neutral city, as soon as the first terrors of it were a little cooled, the common feelings of humanity moved some of the inhabitants to go and try to relieve as many of the deserted sufferers as had not perished for want of more timely assistance, without distinction or respect to any party.

Two of those victims of ambition, who had been enemies in the day of battle, but had since founded a friendship on their common calamity, having been supported by the same charity, and cured of their wounds in the same bed, were now striving to get the mangled remains of their mutilated carcases carried, like other worn-out instruments of the war, to their respective countries. In their journey they happened to be brought to the water side, where we had just taken boat, where they begged in the most moving terms to be admitted, but were absolutely refused, till one of the passengers, an *English* gentleman, took compassion on their distress, and paid their fare.

We were all seated in the equality usual in such vehicles, in which, as in the grave, all conditions are thrown promiscuously together, when the conversation happening to turn upon the war which then reigned in most parts of Europe, and every one speaking variously, as prejudice or opinion dictated, the *Englishman* chanced to say, that he thought such a combination of the greatest powers of Europe, as at that time laboured to oppress the King of *Bulgaria*, was, to divest it of the intricacies of ambition, and bring politics to the rule of reason and justice, the most injurious, and even base abuse of power, that could

could be inſtanced in the Chriſtian hiſtory; and he hoped, and indeed doubted not, but that glorious prince, and the bravery and attachment of his ſubjects to his cauſe, that is, really to their own cauſe, would riſe ſuperior to all the attempts of his enemies, and retort upon them the ſtroke which they had perfidiouſly aimed at his ruin, to their diſhonour and confuſion.

The rage into which this reflection, ſo injurious to the glory of the *Grand Monarque*, threw one of the paſſengers, who thought it levelled particularly at him, though no names had been mentioned, was ſo great, that he could not ſuppreſs it till the gentleman ſhould conclude, but interrupting him, without the leaſt reſpect to his perſonal obligation, for he was one of the two whom I mentioned to have been admitted into the boat on his charity; 'What do you mean, 'Sir (ſaid he), by ſaying that this war will end in 'the diſhonour of the King of *France*? Was not 'his motive for entering into it the moſt diſintereſted and glorious, to ſupport the rights of ſovereignty, and bring vaſſals to a proper ſenſe of duty 'and obedience? And has not the ſucceſs been anſwerable to the greatneſs of his deſigns? Have 'not his forces been every where victorious by land 'and ſea?'

The tone of voice with which theſe words were ſpoken, drew the eyes of all preſent upon the ſpeaker, a little old withered creature, who wanted both his legs, and ſcarce ſeemed to have ſkin enough, not to ſay fleſh, to cover the remainder of his ſhattered bones, and keep them together. But his ſpirit ſupplied all theſe diſadvantages, and enabled him to raiſe himſelf upon his ſtumps, and caſt a look of the moſt ferocious rage around him, as if he meant to deſtroy whoever dared to diſpute his words.

But his triumph was not long, his fellow-traveller immediately taking him up with equal fury; 'How! '(ſaid

'(ſaid he), the army of *France* ever victorious over '*Bulgaria!* what aſſurance can dictate ſuch a falſe-'hood? Where have they obtained one victory? 'where have they eſcaped defeat, except when the 'ſuperiority of their numbers has exceeded all pro-'portion?. and, even then, their ſlain have generally 'equalled the whole amount of the forces whom 'they fought with. What armies have they loſt 'already! how few of theſe which remain will ever 'return to their native home, even in the wretched 'condition that you do?'

Theſe laſt words raiſed a general laugh at the perſon who ſpoke them, he being, if poſſible, in a more maimed and helpleſs condition than the one to whom they were addreſſed, having loſt both his arms, and one of his eyes.

He perceived the motive of their mirth, and ſubmitting to the rebuke with a manly fortitude of mind, 'Leſee, gentlemen (ſaid he), that you laugh at my 'mentioning the wretchedneſs of any other living 'creature with contempt, who am ſuch a ſufferer my-'ſelf! but what abſurdities will not paſſion hurry 'men into? and how could human patience bear to 'hear this *Frenchman* boaſt of the victories of his 'monarch, whoſe forces I myſelf have aſſiſted to rout 'at every place wherever I have met them!'

'You rout the forces of my maſter! (replied the 'other) my maſter's forces would eat up all your 'maſter's ſubjects for a breakfaſt.'—'I do not deny 'their number nor their appetites, (returned the '*Bulgarian*) they leave ſufficient evidence of both 'wherever they go; cruelty and rapine lead forth 'their armies; famine and deſolation mark their 'marches. Shake not your head at me, nor lift your 'hand, as you regard your life: elſe, loath as I am 'to make miſery ridiculous, by a quarrel between 'two ſuch wretches as we are, though I have not an

'hand

hand to strike, with my foot will I spurn out your life, and trample on your carcase.'

'*Morbleu!* compare the mighty MONARQUE of FRANCE with a little GERMAN king!'

'You mistake me greatly; I never meant to compare them: the greatness of your monarch I do not deny, were it not abused to purposes that make it a dishonour to *him*, and a misfortune to his subjects; whereas our sovereign is the father of his people, and never exerts his power but to their advantage.

'Gentlemen, you must forgive my warmth; any thing against myself, I can despise; but my king, my father, I cannot, I will not hear spoken of with disrespect, while I have a voice left to assert his cause: I have fought for him; I have fought with him: for *he* does not sit rioting in the debaucheries of a court, while his subjects are encountering hardships and dangers, to gratify his vanity or revenge. His quarrels are the quarrels of his people; and he fights their battles with them; and the only regret I feel for the loss of my arms is, that I can employ them no longer in his service, for which I would lay down my life this minute with joy, could it gain him the least advantage, or was necessary to prove my attachment to him.

'But since I can no longer have the happiness of being of service to him, all I have now to do is, to retire to my native country, where his paternal care has made such a provision for my wants, that I shall wear out my days in content, without ever having my prayers for his welfare and success, disturbed by one repining wish, one just complaint.

'But ask this vain-glorious knight-errant if he can say so? Did he fight for the preservation of his family, his country, and his religion, as I did? Did he fight under the conduct of his sovereign, who personally provided for the necessities, the comforts of his men, as I did? Is he sure of a peace-

'ful

'ful retreat at home, safe from the additional distress 'of want, as I am?

'Not at all; he fought for he knew not what, he 'knew not whom. At a distance from his king, who 'was insensible of his dangers, and revelled in deli-'cacies, while his subjects, the victims of his ambi-'tion, were destitute of the common indispensible ne-'cessaries of nature; nor has he any other hope of 'prolonging his miserable days when he gets home, 'but the wretch's last resource of begging, in a coun-'try so exhausted by the vain tyranny of his master, 'that charity is almost an ineffectual virtue, for want 'of means for its exertion.'—All present were struck with the force with which the soldier delivered his sentiments, nor did his antagonist attempt any reply, but opening their common wallet, in which the *Bulgarian* carried all their wealth, he took out what belonged to himself, saying, with a sneer, 'that since 'his feet were so good, he might hereafter use them 'instead of hands, for he would feed him no longer.'

This poor-spirited sarcasm was received by the person to whom it was applied, with a smile of disdain, though it raised the idle laughter of the greater part present. But the *Englishman* received it in another manner: for, drawing out his purse, he took twenty ducats, and, putting them himself into the pocket of the *Bulgarian*, 'Accept of these, my brother soldier,' '(said he) to make your journey into your native 'country more convenient, where you cannot meet 'more tender regard from your sovereign and coun-'try, than your sensible attachment to them merits. 'As far as I shall go your way I will take care of 'you myself, and that will defray the expence of the 'rest of your journey with comfort.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

The history of the Bulgarian soldier. CHRYSAL *is carried to his destined master.*

THE *Bulgarian* was unable to express his gratitude for this charity, the manner of presenting which, doubled the obligation of it. But the big tear that stole in silence down his manly cheek, as he bowed his head to his benefactor, spoke it with a more affecting eloquence than any words could do; and influenced every person present so much in his favour, as to make them vie in offering him their assistance.

As soon as he recovered utterance, 'Such (said he) 'is the noble benevolence that distinguishes the sons 'of liberty: such the generosity of heart, that always 'extends the ready hand of a *Briton* with relief to 'the distressed. May Heaven preserve to your happy 'nation the blessings which enable it to exert its virtues, to make them a blessing to all who want their 'assistance. And though envy may malign, and ingratitude return benefits with evil, beneficence 'finds its reward in its own exertion, in the certainty 'of a retribution from those treasures which never 'fail.'

The turn of this soldier's discourse, and particularly the last part of it, seemed so much above his present appearance, that it raised a curiosity in his benefactor to ask him, 'If he had been bred to arms, 'or how long he had professed the military life, and 'in what station?'

'O, Sir, (replied he, with a sigh that seemed to 'tear his heart), your question recals to my memo'ry scenes that I would willingly forget for ever, 'and obliges me to relate such things as would draw 'tears from *Tartars*, *Pandours*, or the cruellest sol-

'diers

'diers of the King of *France*.——I was not bred to 'arms, nor have I followed the military profeſſion 'long, or in any other rank than that which rage 'and deſpair firſt placed me in, when I offered my-'ſelf to my ſovereign to repel the invaders, and re-'venge the deſolation of my bleeding country. My 'unhappy ſtory is no more than this.

'I am a native of *Bulgaria*, the ſon of a miniſter 'of the goſpel, who, obſerving a deſire of knowledge 'in my youth, encouraged and improved it by his 'own precepts and example, and led my ſtudious 'mind through the ſublimeſt paths of ſcience.

'As ſoon as he ſaw my reſolutions ſufficiently eſta-'bliſhed to be proof againſt the levity of youth, and 'temptations of ſenſe, he yielded to my intreaties, 'and I was admitted into the ſacred order of which 'he was a member, and made the perfection of hu-'man wiſdom, the practice of piety and virtue, un-'der the direction of the divine word, the buſineſs 'of my happy life. Happy indeed then! but now 'the recollection of that happineſs aggravates my 'preſent miſery, in the irrecoverable loſs of it, al-'moſt to deſpair.

'As the religion of the benign Redeemer of man-'kind does not enjoin impoſſibilities, by requiring us 'to eradicate paſſions which are the eſſence of our 'nature, and whoſe indulgence, under the direction 'of reaſon and virtue, is the end of our creation, and 'the baſis of our being, and fulfils the firſt divine 'command, by continuing our ſpecies, and increaſ-'ing the number of his adorers, I obeyed the im-'pulſe of virtuous love, and married the daughter of 'a neighbouring divine, who completed to me, as I 'vainly thought, the ſum of human happineſs, by a 'numerous offspring, which grew up on the knees of 'their aged grandſire, my father, now become too 'feeble for the active duties, while my labours ſup-'plied the neceſſaries of life to my contented family,

'in which I thus ſtood the happy centre of filial and 'paternal love.

'In this bleſſed ſtate did I advance toward heaven, 'when envy of his glory, and fear of his virtues, 'brought this deſtructive war upon the dominions of 'our ſovereign. O, my father! my children! my 'wife! in one day did I loſe you all. Theſe eyes 'beheld my habitation reduced to aſhes, my children 'maſſacred in the wantonneſs of cruelty, in deſpight 'of the prayers of my aged father, whoſe ſnow-white 'hairs, whoſe whole appearance, would have ſtruck 'the ruthleſs hearts of the ancient heathen *Gauls* 'with reverence; in deſpight of the cries of my beau-'teous wife, who both begged to draw their fury on 'themſelves from the defenceleſs innocents! But all 'in vain: the murderers, deaf to their cries and in-'treaties, inſenſible to the beauty of the babes, who 'ſtood ſmiling at the ſword that hung over their 'heads, firſt butchered them as in ſport, then abuſed 'the perſon of my wife to death, and mangled my 'father's breathleſs body, whoſe tender heart the 'grief of ſuch a ſight had burſt, while *I*, unhappier 'far than any, ſtood looking on, bound to a tree, with 'my jaws diſtended with the head of a ſpear, and my 'cheeks cut open thus from ear to ear, a Bible being 'placed before me, and a *French prieſt* ſtanding by, 'encouraging their cruelty, as meritorious againſt 'heretics, and inſultingly bidding me *preach now to* 'my congregation; at the ſame time refuſing me the 'releaſe of death, which I beſought by all the ſigns 'deſpair could ſuggeſt, and making them leave me, 'naked, and whipped till my body was all one 'wound, to periſh by famine and grief.

'But Heaven had ordained otherwiſe for me: 'ſome of my neighbours, who had eſcaped their 'fury, came as ſoon as night favoured their fears, 'to learn our fate, and offer any aſſiſtance in their 'power. They unbound me; they buried the re-

'mains

'mains of my ſlaughtered family, and forced me
'from the grave to their retreat in the woods, where
'they healed my wounds, and ſtrove to comfort my
'diſtreſs. But all their arguments would have been
'too weak to make me ſuffer life, had not a deſire
'of revenge taken poſſeſſion of my ſoul, and ſilenced
'every other thought.

'As ſoon as I had recovered ſtrength, I haſted to
'the army of my ſovereign, where I threw myſelf at
'his feet, and told him all my diſtreſs. He heard me
'with pity; he ſhed tears at my ſad ſtory; and,
'raiſing me with his own hand, 'Be comforted, my
'brother, (ſaid the mighty monarch to his meaneſt
'ſubject), be comforted; the loſſes of the juſt will
'be repaid in heaven; there thy happy family expect
'thine arrival; there thy virtues will be rewarded,
'thy joys complete, when the evils of this world,
'which endure but for a moment, ſhall be at an end.
'The horrors of war agree not with the innocence of
'your paſt life, or the humane tenderneſs of your
'diſpoſition, and would but aggravate your griefs,
'by the unhappy unavoidable repetition of the like
'ſcenes of ruin. Retire therefore to my capital,
'where all comforts of life ſhall be provided for you,
'to alleviate your diſtreſs, while your prayers aſſiſt
'us in the day of battle.'

'I heard his words with reverence, but his virtue
'was too ſublime for my imitation. I fell again at
'his feet, and, wringing my hands, 'O Sir, (ſaid I),
'this goodneſs is too great for man! alas, I am un-
'able to obey its dictates! my ſoul languiſhes for
'vengeance! O bear with human infirmity, and per-
'mit me to fight under thy command! Heaven
'heard not my prayers, or it would have prevented
'my ruin: let me then have recourſe to other me-
'thods for redreſs: let me contribute my poor help
'to thy victories, to the deliverance of my country.
'I die this moment, if my prayer is refuſed.'

'Be then my companion in this just war, (said my sovereign, raising me again); and, since thy sacred function must not be disgraced with any other rank, fight by my side, and lead me to success.'

'From that day have I followed his steps in the field of battle at an awful distance, and been witness to all the wonders of his conduct and valour, till, in the late action, a cannon shot took off both my arms, as I had the honour of holding my own horse for him to mount, his having been killed under him as I fought by his side.

'He expressed concern at my misfortune, and commanded me to retire to his own tent; but an *Austrian* hussar, the moment after, cut me down with his sabre, though, in the unpremeditated instinct of self-preservation, I had held up both my bleeding stumps to ward the blow.

'Here I lay among my fellow-sharers in the common calamity, in submissive expectation of the stroke of fate from the horse's feet, or the pillagers of the field. But Heaven had otherwise ordained; and, after two days weltering in my blood, I was relieved, and recovered by charity, to the condition to which you see me, and am now striving to go and avail myself of my master's humane offer, which your benevolence enables me to do with comfort.

'This fellow-sufferer, whose arrogance first prompted me to speak, has been a sharer with me also in the charity which relieved us; where our common calamity created a kind of friendship between us; and our necessities suggested it to us, to combine the remains of our limbs for mutual assistance, he preparing our victuals and feeding me, while I have carried not only our poor baggage, but him also upon my back.

'But that alliance is at an end, not because the relief which you so generously have bestowed upon

'me,

'me, may seem to free me from the necessity of his 'assistance, for I must beg your leave to divide it 'with him, as half is sufficient for me; but that my 'soul abhors the principles which first led him into 'this distress, and which even such sufferings cannot 'show the impious absurdity of; and disclaims con-'nection with the enemy of my gracious sovereign, 'who would thus malign his glory, when he cannot 'deny, nor longer resist the virtues that have rais-'ed it.'

By this time we arrived at the place where I was to be delivered to the minister of my destined master, who immediately carried me to him.

CHAP. XXII.

How CHRYSAL *found his master employed. The grandeur and happiness of absolute power. His cares for the augmentation and support of his revenues. His rage at the insolence of liberty, punctuality to his engagements, and resolutions to maintain the consequence of his rank.*

WE found him busied in reviewing some new levies, which he had just raised, to hire out to the best bidder of the parties then engaged in war, without ever examining the justice of the cause, or considering any other motive or consequence, than just the immediate price he was to receive, out of which he bounteously allowed them a pittance, to support the lives so useful to him.

As soon as the men were ordered to their quarters, his highness retired with his minister, who, presenting the bag in which *we* were, with a bent knee, 'The subsidy, may it please your most Serene High-'ness, from *England*,' (said he.)—'It is well,

'(replied the ſovereign); but upon what terms?'—'The ſame your Highneſs had laſt year.'—'No more! they ſhall not have my men: I can have more elſewhere: *France* offers better.'—'Then I muſt return this money, pleaſe your Highneſs.'—'Return it! no, for what?'—'If your Highneſs does not like the terms, you will not keep the money, I preſume?'—'Fool, but I will! ſuch laws may bind you ſubject wretches, but ſovereign princes are above them; laws are not made for us.'—'I humbly implore your Highneſs's pardon for my ignorance; then you will give thoſe troops to France?'—'Yes, when *France* pays me for them.'—'But, in the mean time, as *England* has already paid your Highneſs, they will depend on them, and conſequently ſuffer by the diſappointment.'—'Then let them prize my friendſhip properly another time; I am not obliged to ſupport Kings upon their thrones for nothing; I may invade, as well as guard againſt invaſion. They ſhall know whom they dare offend.'

'Something has provoked your Highneſs's wrath, which I am afraid my ignorance ſhould aggravate.'—'I will teach the reſpect that's due to ſovereignty; I am not King of *England*, curbed in my will, and limited in power; my ſubjects are my ſlaves; they dare not think of any other law beſide my pleaſure. Death! can you think it? my miniſter at the court of *England* writes me word, that a baſe plebeian merchant has had the aſſurance to demand payment for the goods he ſent me laſt year, for the ſupport and ſplendor of my court, and, on its not being deducted from the ſubſidy, to refuſe ſupplying me this year, and even to threaten complaining to their parliament.

'Now, judge you, if a ſovereign prince, whoſe forces are their ſecurity in time of danger, can brook ſuch inſolence. And, to conclude the whole,

'what

'what did the *Engliſh* miniſter ſay, when my miniſ-
'ter remonſtrated with him on this affair, but that,
'by the laws of *England*, no man could be compel-
'led to part with his property againſt his will, or
'hindered to complain, if he thought himſelf ag-
'grieved; and that the laws were ſacred, and muſt
'not be infringed? Think now, if I can, with ho-
'nour, keep an alliance with ſuch people, till I have
'received ſatisfaction: I, whoſe ſubjects have no
'property nor laws, but my will, to be treated in
'ſuch a manner by a vile trader: it is not to be
'borne.'

'I am very ſorry to hear of this affair, and parti-
'cularly at this time; becauſe if your highneſs
'ſhould break with the *Engliſh* now, when they
'think they want your men, they may be provoked
'never to deal with your highneſs for them another
'time, when they have no other occaſion for them,
'only to do your highneſs a ſervice.'

'Why, there may be ſomething in that; and
'therefore, if they will ſend me the merchandize I
'want, and raiſe the ſubſidy, perhaps I may not re-
'ſuſe them the ſuccours they deſire.'

'How much does your highneſs require to have
'the ſubſidy raiſed?'

'I have not thought of that yet. But ſurely they
'cannot be ſo unreaſonable as to expect my men at
'the ſame rate, now in time of danger, as they had
'them in peace, when there was nothing at all for
'them to do, but they could work at their trades at
'home, and maintain themſelves without wearing out
'their uniform, or any other expence to me?'—
'That is very true, if your highneſs was not to con-
'ſider at the ſame time, that even then they paid you as
'much as if it was a time of war, and indeed more
'than any other nation will, or can pay you now:
'for as to the promiſes of *France*, they are not to be

'depended

'depended on at all, whereas *England* always pays 'well.'

'I do not care. What I have gotten here I will 'keep, by way of repriſal, for the inſult offered to 'my honour; and if they will have my troops, they 'ſhall pay me over again for them: ſo ſay no more 'on that head.'

'I ſubmit; but how will your highneſs ſubſiſt 'them at home in the mean time? There muſt be 'an immediate remittance made of ſome of this mo-'ney to *Holland* to buy proviſions, for your maga-'zines are quite exhauſted, and the conſtant demand 'for men to ſupply the troops you have agreed for, 'and recruit the loſſes they have ſuſtained in battle, 'have not left ſufficient to cultivate the land.'

'Then let them ſtarve. I ſhall not expend a 'penny to ſupport them: could not the women and 'children work? I wonder you ſhould dare to men-'tion ſuch a thing. If I lay out this money, what 'is to ſupport the ſplendour of my court, ſince this '*Engliſhman* has refuſed to ſupply me?'

'I humbly beg your highneſs's pardon; but what 'anſwer am I to ſend to the *Engliſh*, who have de-'manded that the troops ſhould march directly?'

'Why, that I am ſo enraged at the inſult offered 'to me by that merchant, that I will not let a man 'of them ſtir till I have ſatisfaction, and a new ſub-'ſidy; and that I keep this one in the mean time, 'to make up the deficiencies in former years.'

'Deficiencies! I do not underſtand your highneſs; 'the ſubſidies have been always regularly paid.'

'Obey my commands. I ſay there have been de-'ficiencies, which I am not at leiſure to explain in 'this emergency; but I ſuppoſe my word will be 'taken for it.'

'I fear, your highneſs does not attend to the 'change which has lately been in *England*. The 'people who might have taken ſuch an anſwer are

'now

'now out of power; and their ſucceſſors are the 'very men who have always been againſt dealing 'with your highneſs, and may now take the advan- 'tage of this breach of faith, for ſuch I well know 'they will call it, to throw off your alliance for ever: 'for the people begin to ſee their own ſtrength, and 'their governors to exert it properly, and ſhow them 'that they want no foreign aſſiſtance. And as a 'proof of this, at this very time when their enemies 'not only talk of invading them more confidently 'than ever, but alſo have gone ſo far as to make 'preparations for ſuch an attempt, ſo far from being 'diffident of their own ſtrength, or intimidated to 'call for help, they have actually ſent a powerful 'body of their troops abroad, and are carrying on 'the war with vigour and ſucceſs in every quarter of 'the world, ſatisfied that the inhabitants who remain 'at home are able to defend their country, and repel 'every attempt that may be made againſt it. And 'this change in their meaſures ſhould give a caution 'how the perſons who effected it are provoked.'

'I care not, I will make the experiment; but do 'you draw up your diſpatches in ſuch a manner, that 'we may have it in our power to explain them to 'whatever ſenſe ſhall ſuit us beſt. In the mean 'time, we muſt keep up our appearance of treating 'with *France*, to give a weight to our deſigns.'

The miniſter was prevented from replying by the entrance of the muſter-maſter, who had been juſt making a ſurvey, and taking an account of ever man *able to bear arms* in his highneſs's territories.

'Well (ſaid his highneſs), how do your muſters 'anſwer? Shall I be able to enlarge the number of 'my troops this year?'—'May it pleaſe your moſt 'ſerene highneſs (replied the officer), here is the re- 'turn, in which I have taken down every man from 'twelve to ſeventy, according to your commands.'— 'And how do they anſwer? better than laſt year, I

'hope;

'hope; there must be a great many boys grown up 'since.'—'The list indeed looks almost as full as 'usual; but the late battles have so drained us of 'men to fill up the troops, that there are scarce any 'but boys left at home, and those have been so badly 'fed of late, that their size does not answer their 'years, and they look wretchedly beside. So that, 'upon the whole, I fear your highness will find it 'very difficult to complete the forces already esta-'blished, much more to raise any new.'

'I must, I will raise them! Tell me not of dif-'ficulties! what I command shall be performed! If 'there are not men, the women shall put on the men's 'clothes and go; I will not be shortened of my re-'venue: they shall fight themselves, since they have 'not bred soldiers for me.'

'This, please your highness, is a list of the dis-'abled men, who are not able to support themselves 'by any kind of work, having lost their limbs in the 'wars.'

'Disabled men! I thought I ordered you not to 'exchange them; they might have remained in the 'hands of the enemy: such I mean of them as are 'not able to breed soldiers for me, and cultivate the 'lands; or such as were not prisoners might have 'been let perish of their wounds; it would have 'been a mercy to them to shorten their misery.'

'May it please your highness, I observed your or-'ders, and left a number of such wretches unex-'changed; but the enemy saw into my design, and 'sent them home, to be rid of the trouble of them. 'And now they are crying for subsistence, and de-'mand the arrears of their pay, which were stopped 'while they were prisoners. The others our surgeons 'took proper care of.'

'Insolent slaves! demand pay when they are no 'longer able to earn it! And subsistence too! They 'learned this impudence from their conversation with

'those

'those Engliſh! it is much they did not demand 'roaſt beef and pudding too!—Hang up half of 'them, the next word of the kind they dare to ut-'ter, to terrify the other half to ſtarve in quiet. 'And at your peril let me hear no more of them.

'As for the muſters, I will have them completed; 'man, woman, and child ſhall go! I will make my 'dominions a deſert, before I leſſen my conſequence 'among the ſovereign powers of Europe.'

CHAP. XXIII.

More cares of ſovereignty, and conſequences of grandeur. CHRYSAL *is ſent to the market, where he is given to a Jew for bacon.*

HIS highneſs had juſt declared this magnanimous reſolution, when the ſteward of his houſhold entered to let him know, that the butchers and bakers of the next *Hans-town*, from whence his table was ſupplied, had refuſed to ſend him any more proviſions till their bills were paid, as they had heard he was to receive no more ſubſidies from *England*; and there was ſcarce enough to make out dinner for that day, for the court was very numerous and brilliant, all the princes and princeſſes of the various branches of his highneſs's moſt illuſtrious houſe, having come to pay him a viſit of congratulation, upon the birth of the moſt ſerene prince his ſon and heir; and that his purveyors had been able to find nothing in his own dominions fit for his table, but bear's fleſh and veniſon, nor even a ſufficient quantity of theſe; the miſery of his people having made them venture to break through his laws, and hunt in his foreſts, to ſave themſelves and their families from periſhing by famine.

His

His highneſs had hearkened to him without any emotion, or even concern, till he mentioned this outrageous inſult upon his ſovereign authority and pleaſure: but then, burſting into a rage, 'Hunt in 'my foreſts! (ſaid he) audacious ſlaves! dearly 'ſhall they pay for their preſumption! Order my 'troops to march that way directly! I'll lay the 'country waſte!'—'Pleaſe you highneſs (replied 'the ſteward) that will not coſt you the trouble 'of marching your troops: the country is a deſart 'already.'

'Who told you that they have been guilty of this 'inſolence? you ſhould have ſeized the author of the 'report, for not apprehending the criminals.'

'May it pleaſe your highneſs, they took one 'wretch in the very fact, and have brought him here 'to receive the ſentence of your pleaſure; and the 'ſtag with him alive, which he found in a pit, and 'had borrowed a gun to ſhoot. He pleaded hunger, 'and the cries of a ſtarving family of grand child-'ren, for he is an old man, and his three ſons have 'been killed in the wars; but though I own he 'moved me, I did not preſume to let him go.'

'It is well you did not, or you ſhould have ſuf-'fered in his ſtead. Go, ſtrip him naked, bind him 'on that ſtag, and then let him looſe with him up-'on his back into the woods, proclaiming that no 'one, upon pain of death, preſume to give him the 'leaſt relief: he ſhall have hunting enough.'

'But what will your highneſs have me do about 'proviſions for the entertainment of the princes? I 'believe they deſign a long viſit, for they have 'brought all the young princes and princeſſes of their 'illuſtrious families with them.'

'I care not! I am not to be diſturbed on ſuch 'trifles now, when the fate of nations depends on my 'reſolution: let them go home again.'

'Not

'Not faſting, I preſume? for they have already 'ſignified, ſome of them, that they have come 'without their breakfaſts, by calling for refreſhment 'the moment they arrived; and indeed, I fear, the 'principal motive of this viſit of their highneſſes, 'was want of any thing to eat at home.'

'Confuſion! what can I do? Here, take this 'money, and ſend for victuals for them.'

The ſight of an handful of guineas was an agreeable ſurpriſe to the ſteward, who had not heard of the arrival of the ſubſidy from *England*. He received them with evident pleaſure, and I felt no leſs in being delivered from this ſcene of ſovereignty, of which I was ſincerely ſick; though by the change, I fell from being the price of armies, to the domeſtic office of going to market for a morſel of bread; from the glory of cauſing the ſlaughter of thouſands, to the virtue of ſupporting the lives of a few.

The ſteward, as ſoon as he withdrew from the preſence of his highneſs, called the other officers of the houſhold together, and told them, with joy in his countenance, that there was no foundation for the report of their maſter's breaking with *England*, ſo that they might look famine in the face for another year, and confirmed the glad-tidings by ſhewing them the gold.

The pleaſing ſight raiſed univerſal joy; they licked their lips, feaſted in imagination, and prepared things for getting dinner ready, with all the alacrity of willing minds and keen appetites; while the ſteward, not caring to truſt a commiſſion of that importance to any inferior officer, waited only to waſh down a mouldy cruſt with a draught of four wine, and then went to market for himſelf.

The appearance of things changed as ſoon as I left the hereditary dominions of his highneſs, and entered into the little territories of a free ſtate.

Plenty was the reward of industry, and content supplied well the place of grandeur.

As his highness's minister had pressing motives to accelerate his negociations, he went directly to the several dealers in provisions, and ordering a comfortable supply on the credit of our appearance, returned, with the greatest dispatch, to the discharge of the offices of his high employment, in the ceremonials of the court.

In the course of these transactions, it fell to my lot to be paid to a Jew for bacon and sausages, the butchers of his religion being held to make the best of the latter, as they never cut out the nice bits to eat themselves.

CHAP. XXIV.

Comparison between two dealers in flesh. The celebration of the PASSOVER *in the traditional way, and the method of procuring (human) lambs explained.*

I NOW entered into a service, the most diametrically opposite of any in nature to my last; my present master denying himself the very necessaries of life, to hide his riches under the appearance of poverty, as my last lived in the vain ostentation of splendour, to conceal his poverty under the appearance of riches.

It was difficult to say, which hypocrisy was most absurd and contradictory to the immutable laws of moral justice. The former basely stealing, as I may say, that wealth which was ordained to be of advantage to it, and whose value arises only from its being used, by thus secreting it in his coffers; and the latter, in gratification of a vanity as unjustifiable as that of

of avarice, committing every kind of actual violence to supply the want of it.

I here was soon initiated into all the mysteries of that lower species of trade called *Pedling*, which is in a manner engrossed by those people. False weights and measures, adulteration of wares, lying, perjury, in a word, every species of deceit, that can impose upon ignorance and credulity, were here reduced into a science, taught by precept, and enforced by example, from the earliest exertion of reason, to wear off every hesitation of conscience, and make the practice natural and expert.

The beauty of my appearance, for I had hitherto escaped mutilation, made my master, who was an adept in that art, think it improper to throw me among his diminished heap, as I should but make their loss the more remarkable. He therefore put me into his purse, to make a shew with upon occasions, and appear as a proof of his innocence of that practice, for which he was strongly suspected.

The evening after I came into his possession, happened to be one of their most solemn festivals. My master, therefore, who was of the tribe of *Levi*, retired from business early, to purify and prepare himself for the celebration of the most sacred and mysterious ceremony of their religion.

This was the sacrifice of the *Passover*, which, by a secret tradition, never committed to writing, for fear of being betrayed, was changed from the typical offering of a lamb, to the real immolation of human blood; for which purpose, the most beautiful children were purchased at any expence, and under any pretext, from the ignorance of necessitous parents, or the perfidious avarice of servants, if they could not be obtained by stealth, and brought from all parts of Europe, to these ceremonies; it being a long-received opinion, that the original sacrifice of a lamb was designed only for that one occasion, to conciliate the

favour of Heaven to the escape of their forefathers out of *Egypt*; but that, to render it propitious to their restoration to their country, and to the consummation of their promised happiness and glory, the type must be changed for the thing typified, and human blood, in the purest state of infant innocence, be offered instead of the ineffectual blood of a brute.

But, as some traces of natural affection might remain even in hearts divested of the feelings of common humanity, to remove every obstacle to this practice, and stimulate superstition by hatred and revenge, the children of Christians were appointed for this sacrifice, and those especially of the superior ranks of life whose pride might be too apt to make them treat the people of the Jews with severity and contempt.

As to other points, the rules laid down in the institution of the *Passover* were literally observed, in respect to the victim, who was to be *without blemish, a male of the first year*, that is, the first born of his mother, and *to be kept fourteen days before he was sacrificed*; during which time, they fed him with the richest food, to raise him to the highest perfection of his nature.

The place chosen for the celebration of this ceremony, was a summer-house in a garden belonging to one of the rulers of their synagogue, where they all met at the appointed time. As soon as they were placed in order, one of the elders stood up, and, in a long speech, declared the occasion of their meeting, read the original institution of the *Passover*, and then recited the tradition, which changed the sacrifice to be offered, as I said before; concluding with an oath of secrecy, which all present joined in, and confirmed with the most dreadful imprecations, and which was to be sealed by the participation of the horrid mystery.

When

When he had ended, the victims of that night were produced, their bodies examined for fear of blemish, and their primogeniture proved by thoſe who had provided them, who were reimburſed their expences before the ſacrifice began, by the general contribution of all preſent.

This method was uſed, that every perſon might have an equal ſhare in the merit of the ſacrifice, as it would be dangerous and too expenſive to provide a *lamb* for every head of a family in the congregation.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

The rites are interrupted, and the victims changed. This cleared up without a miracle. The few survivors of the first fury brought to public justice.

I SEE your aſtoniſhment, how ſo abſurd an opinion could ever take poſſeſſion of a rational mind, as that the Deity can be pleaſed with the breach of his moſt ſtrict command, and rendered propitious by an action, againſt which his ſevereſt vengeance is denounced; yet ſuch are the errors, which the leaſt deviation from the ſtraight paths of reaſon lead to, when ceremony is made the eſſence of religion, and human inventions ſubſtituted in the place of immutable eternal virtue.

The *Devil*, whoever is meant by that moſt comprehenſive name, has long been charged with being the author of this, and every other vice and folly which men are aſhamed of owning themſelves, his temptation being a convenient and comfortable excuſe. But if man would conſider a little, he muſt bluſh at ſo unfair and ridiculous a charge, and give the poor *Devil* his due, who, among all his failings, has never been ſuſpected of being a fool; and nothing elſe could have deviſed ſuch groſs enormities, ſuch contradictions to the plaineſt rules of common reaſon.

But of this ſtrange inſtitution of human ſacrifices, we need ſearch for the original no farther than in the heart

heart of man, who observing, that, to inculcate the duty of gratitude, the first of moral virtues, the Divine will had directed returns of its blessings to be made in the way of oblation or sacrifice, soon perverted the original purity of the institution to his own depravity, and, measuring the Divine beneficence by his capricious avarice, concluded, that the richer the oblation, or the dearer to the offerer, the greater would the merit of it be; and thus he arose from a lamb to an hecatomb, from brute to human blood; his eagerness to obtain the end, for which he thus strove to bribe the favour of Heaven, hindering him to see the absurdity of the means he used.

All things being prepared, the victims were brought to the altar naked and bound, the instruments for slaying, and the fires for roasting them (for, horror to human thought! they were to have feasted on their flesh) in readiness, and the butchers, of whom my master was one, just going to begin their work, when the doors of the house were burst open, with an outcry that heightened the terrors of the guilty wretches, and a band of soldiers rushed in and seized them, as they stood stupified with their fright.

The horror of the sight gave a respite to their fate, striking the very hearts of the soldiers (though hardened by all the cruelties of war) with an astonishment that deprived them of power to stir for some moments. But this was only a short calm, that, as it were, gave time to the storm to gather; for, as they stood thus gazing at each other, one of the children cried out, *O father! father! come and untie my hands; these ugly cords hurt me!*

The voice no sooner struck the ear of the officer who commanded the party, than, starting into a phrenzy, he ran to the child, whom he had not distinguished before, as he lay naked on the ground, and, snatching him up in his arms, '*O my child!*' (said he in an ecstasy), *have I found you? have I*

'*rescued*

'reſcued you in the very moment when you were going to 'be ſacrificed by theſe wretches? O my child! my child!"

Theſe words awoke the fury of the ſoldiers, which burſt upon the wretched Jews with a violence not to be reſtrained. The houſe was, in a moment, a ſcene of horror beyond deſcription. Moſt of them fell inſtant ſacrifices to their reſiſtleſs rage: happier far, in having ſo ſpeedy an end put to their ſufferings, than the few ſurvivors, who ſaved their lives for that moment by throwing themſelves among the dead, or taking hold of the children, whom, even in this hurricane of paſſion, the ſoldiers took all care not to hurt.

The little reſpite which this caution gave, the officers improved to pacify the ſoldiers, who would not be perſuaded to ſpare the reſt by any other argument, but a poſitive aſſurance of having them put to the moſt ſevere and infamous public death.

When the ſtorm was a little calmed by theſe means, and the living ſeparated from the dead, the pillage of the ſcene was given up to the men, who rifled all, living and dead, with the moſt unrelenting ſeverity, and retaliated their wicked intentions with exemplary juſtice on the miſerable criminals, ſtripping them quite naked, and binding them with the very cords which they took off their deſtined victims, who were unbound with the tendereſt care, and carried away till their parents ſhould be diſcovered, or, in caſe that could not be, to be educated at the public expence, as the children of the ſtate, while their intended murderers were thrown into priſon, till a puniſhment ſhould be appointed ſevere enough for their guilt.

In the confuſion of this affair, I fell into the hands of the officer who had found his child, whoſe paſſions were raiſed ſo high by the recovery of him, that, as ſoon as the plunder was over, he left his charge to another, and retired to ſhare his joy with his diſconſolate wife.

The

The tenderneſs of this meeting was a juſt reverſe of the former part of the laſt ſcene, where the helpleſs infants were led forth to be ſlaughtered.

As the Jews were ſome of the wealthieſt of the inhabitants, and carried on a great part of the trade of the city, the magiſtrates, to prevent the imputation of injuſtice, and to ſet the whole affair in a proper light to the world, convened the people early next morning, where the reſcued infants were produced, on one ſide, and the few that remained alive of their intended butchers, on the other, when my new maſter, who bore a conſiderable office in the ſtate beſide his military command, unfolded the whole affair in a ſhort, but moving ſpeech. He told them, 'That, 'having loſt his only child, the infant there preſent, 'about a month before, and being informed, when 'he ſerved in *Poland* in his youth, that the Jews had 'a cuſtom of ſtealing, and ſacrificing or murdering 'infants, on the night when they celebrated their '*Paſſover*, he made no ſearch for him, but ſeemed to 'believe a ſtory which he had invented himſelf, to 'appeaſe the diſtraction of his wife, that he had been 'killed and devoured by a tame wolf, that was kept 'in the garden of his country-houſe, from whence he 'was ſtolen; watching, in the mean time, every 'motion of the Jews with ſuch exactneſs, that he had 'punctual information of their meeting at the place 'where he had ſeized them the evening before; 'where it was to be lamented, that the juſt reſentment of the ſoldiers had anticipated the ſeverer 'hand of juſtice, and ſaved them from the laws, the 'judgment of which he now demanded againſt the 'remaining few, for himſelf, and for the unknown 'parents of the innocent victims whom they ſaw before them.'

A roar of univerſal indignation purſued his words, which had inflamed the rage and deteſtation of the people ſo high, that they were with difficulty reſtrained

ed from tearing the wretches inſtantly in pieces, by the ſame arguments which had ſaved them from the ſoldiers before: nor were the Jews admitted to ſay a word in their own defence; for, though none of the infants had been actually murdered that night, yet the intention was beyond controverſy; and beſide, many of the people, who had formerly loſt their children, now charged them with their murder, with the ſtrongeſt appearance of juſtice.

They were therefore dragged back to priſon, where they lay loaded with chains till the day of their execution, when they were all publicly burned alive on the very ſpot where they were to have perpetrated their guilt, the houſe being raſed to the ground for that purpoſe, and all the effects of ſuch as were taken in this fact, confiſcated to the uſe of the ſtate.

CHAP. II.

A breach of neutrality, properly reſented, brings CHRYSAL *into a ſervice which he had long been ambitious of. How he found his new maſter employed. The King of* Bulgaria's *reception of the humbled magiſtrates. His appropriation of money to his own uſe. His reflections on the ſight of* CHRYSAL.

THIS affair was ſcarce ended, when I changed my maſter again. The city in which I was, had profeſſed a neutrality in the preſent war, but, whether yielding to inclination, or biaſſed by private intereſt, the magiſtrates had, on many occaſions, ſhown the ſtrongeſt partiality to the enemies of the king of *Bulgaria*.

Of this, that heroic prince overlooked many inſtances, in compaſſion to their folly; but, inſtead of inſpiring them with proper ſentiments of gratitude, this moderation

moderation only raised their injudicious pride so high, that, attributing it to fear, they at length proceeded so far, as to refuse him those good offices, which, by the universal laws of mankind, he had a right to demand, and treated his messengers with disrespect.

This drew on them a resentment that was never raised in vain. The king, without waiting to waste time in complaints, sent a body of forces directly to their gates, and obliged them to buy their safety with contributions, and deprecate his vengeance with submissions, which humbled their pride, and terrified their neighbours from being guilty of the like folly.

As these contributions were too large to be immediately discharged by the state, they were obliged to be levied on the subjects, by which means I came into the service of this monarch, to whose treasurer I was paid by the humbled magistrates of the city on their knees.

The many great things which I had heard of this prince, had long made me wish for such an opportunity of seeing him, and of having a knowledge of his heart, that I might be able to judge whether he really was the great man he appeared to the world, by all his actions, to be. How my expectations were answered, cannot be explained justly, without a particular account of every thing I saw while I was with him; but as that would be too much for my time, which begins to grow short, I shall only give you a few of the most remarkable particulars, by which you may form a judgment of the rest.

The king was walking in his camp before the entrance of his tent, after having finished the business of the morning, conversing with the most engaging affability with his officers, and even the private centinels of his guard, redressing their complaints, and relieving their wants, when the magistrates of the city I had just left, arrived to pay their contributions, and make submission for their misbehaviour: for, to

humble

humble them the more effectually, he had ordered that they should attend himself.

As soon as they approached him, they fell on their knees, and, delivering the money to his treasurer, implored his pardon in the most abject terms of submission. 'Arise (said the monarch) and cease your supplications; the posture and address are both improper to be offered to a man; but the passions of the foolish are ever in extremes; and your fear sinks you now as low, as your vain insolence raised you high before. Depart in peace and safety; and let this teach you not to mistake moderation for fear another time. But beware that you offend not so again. Mercy, that is amiable in the first instance, degenerates into folly, if extended to a second.'

The magistrates, unable to speak before him, retired in confusion from his presence, when turning to his treasurer, 'Take (said he) so much of that money as will repair the losses sustained by the innocent inhabitants of the country, around their city, and see that it is given to the sufferers, to be applied to that use, and none other; for I war not with the poor, nor would have my steps marked by desolation, when it can possibly be avoided. And of the remainder, leave the usual sum upon my table, for my private occasions.'

Then addressing himself to the officers around him in general, 'How abject (said he) is the submission of the proud! how does guilt humble the conscious heart! These unhappy men, who dared not now to meet our eyes, but hasted with downcast looks from the flash of just indignation; when last we saw them, looked us in the face with the assurance of friendly respect, and seemed happy in the marks of our regard. Let this teach us to preserve the adamantine shield of a clear conscience, and terror can never strike a dart through it, to our hearts.'

When

When the treaſurer went to divide the money among which I lay, according to his maſter's orders, I was greatly alarmed for fear I ſhould be torn ſo ſoon from the preſence of this prince; but my anxiety was relieved, when he took that bag in which I was, and gave it to one of his maſter's pages to lay on the table.

The many things I had heard of this prince's greatneſs, had, I own, deceived me into expectations of pomp and grandeur in his court, and particularly about his perſon. This made me ſurpriſed to find every thing in a plainneſs, far greater than what I had in many inſtances obſerved in private life. But I inſtantly perceived my error, and that his greatneſs was his own, eſtabliſhed on the virtues of his ſoul, and independent of, and ſuperior to every adventitious circumſtance.

I had not lain long upon his table, when he entered alone, and walking a meditative turn or two acroſs the tent, kneeled down, and offered up his ſoul in the moſt ardent devotion to Heaven.

He then aroſe with a moſt ſerenely chearful countenance, and, coming to the table, poured out the money, and viewing it earneſtly for a moment, 'O thou 'ſource of every evil which diſtracts this wretched 'world, (ſaid he) let me not be infected by thy 'poiſon; let not my heart conceive a fondneſs for 'thee, farther than what thy native value of enabling it to do good, juſtly entitles thee to: I am yet 'free from thine infatuation; nor have ever ſuffered 'avarice to tempt me to deſire thee by improper 'means, nor vain luxury, or pride, to abuſe thee by 'profuſion. This pittance only do I call my own, 'which I devote to the divine Author of all the bene'fits and mercies of my life, in grateful return, by 'ſupplying with it the neceſſities of my diſtreſſed fel'low creatures.'

Then taking an handful of it to put into his pocket, and happening to obſerve *my* ſhape, he took me up, and looking attentively at me, 'Is there no corner of 'the earth (ſaid he) where the wealth of Britain is 'not diſperſed? If its commerce collects the pro- 'duce of every climate under heaven, its munificence 'does alſo diffuſe its riches as far. Great and happy 'nation! wert thou but ſenſible of the bleſſings of 'thy condition: but the time is come, when thou 'openeſt thine eyes to thy own intereſt, and feeleſt 'the mightineſs of thy ſtrength. How great is the 'power of true wiſdom! how happy the people who 'have a good man for their guide!'

Saying this, he put us into his pocket, and, as ſoon as it was dark, wrapped himſelf in a cloak, and went out privately to take a view of his camp, in a diſguiſe that ſecured him from miſinformation or deceit.

CHAP. III.

The king takes a view of his camp in diſguiſe. The exalted pleaſure he received in the various occurrences of his walk. He gains a great victory. His conduct in, and after the battle.

THE notion I had formed of a camp, from the effects which I had ſeen of war, made me expect a ſcene of tumult and confuſion. But how was I ſurpriſed here, to find every thing as regular and tranquil, as in the beſt governed city, in the midſt of peace!

My maſter had not walked far, when ſome converſation, that ſeemed to be carried on with warmth, in one of the tents, catched his ear: he ſtopped to liſten what might be the ſubject of it. 'I imagine (ſaid

'(ſaid a voice within) that we ſhall have a battle 'ſoon: the cheerfulneſs of the king's looks, and the 'more than common ſpirits he has been in for theſe 'few days, are certain ſigns that he has ſome great 'things in view. I always obſerve him ſo before a 'battle.'

'The ſooner it comes the better, (replied another); 'I only wiſh that our forces were not ſo overmatch-'ed in numbers: not that I fear ſucceſs when he is 'with us, but that we might be able to give them a 'total defeat at once, and ſo prevent their making 'head again. For ſuch is the inequality at preſent, 'that, while we are killing half of them, the other 'half eſcape; and though what we deſtroy exceeds 'the number of our own army, yet another army of 'the runaways ſtill remains to give us more trouble. 'But however, we muſt only do our duty, and kill 'them all, one after another.'

'And ſo we will, brother, (continued the other), 'if it pleaſe God to preſerve our King to us; for, 'while we have him, we can fear nothing. The 'number of our enemies only increaſes the glory of 'vanquiſhing them. Indeed I wonder how they can 'ſtand before us even as they do; wretches that are 'dragged to the war againſt their inclination, who 'have no intereſt in the event, no attachment to their 'leader. But what attachment ſhould they have to 'ſuch leaders, who ſhow no regard to their diſtreſſes, 'nor make any proviſion for their wants, but juſt 'drive them to battle, like oxen to the ſlaughter; 'and when it is over, take no farther care about 'them, but let them periſh by famine, if they can-'not relieve themſelves by plundering the unhappy 'countries, friends or enemies alike, through which 'they go?'

'Well, brother, (returned a third voice), thank 'God that is not our caſe; we follow a leader who 'is a father to his ſoldiers, and provides for all their

'occasions. We fight for ourselves and our families, for our laws and religion, and are sure that 'he will support us in the enjoyment of them, when 'he has disappointed the designs of his enemies, and 'restored peace to his people: but if we are to fight 'to-morrow, we had better take our rest to-night, 'to make us fresh and strong for the battle: God 'bless and preserve our King; while his care watches over us, we can sleep in safety in the midst of 'our enemies.'

This genuine tribute of praise melted the heart of the King with the sublimest delight, and drew the tear of tenderness from his eyes. 'O my God, (said 'he, when the voices ceased), enable me to protect 'this people, and to bring this just war to an happy 'end, that they may enjoy the fruit of their virtues.' He then continued his progress, in which he met many such occasions of conscious pleasure. When he saw that all things were in proper order in the camp, his next care was to visit the quarters of the wounded and sick; for he would not trust them to any person, where he could possibly attend to them himself.

The manner in which all things were ordered there for the relief and comfort of the evils inseparable from war, were alone sufficient to raise the highest idea of the tenderness and humane care which directed and supported it. No riot or disorder; no negligence or abuse among the attendants; no misapplication or embezzlement of the provisions made for the patients; all was order and harmony between them. How unlike to other scenes of the same nature which I had seen before!

If he was delighted with the spirited attachment of his soldiers in health, his delight was almost raised to ecstasy by the behaviour of those victims of the madness of the great; the thought of having suffered, in his cause, the extremest anguish of pain, nor even the agonies of death, ever making them utter a syllable

to

to his diſadvantage, or forget him in their prayers, in which his preſervation was always joined with their own relief, and his happineſs recommended with their ſouls to Heaven.

This was too moving to be long borne; he joined in the general prayer, and haſted from the tender ſcene as ſoon as he had fulfilled the motive of his going, by taking a ſtrict view of every thing in which his orders might be diſobeyed, and theſe his particular family, as he called them, ſuffer by neglect.

His tour was now finiſhed, and he returned to his tent to take his neceſſary reſt, having diſtributed, on the various occaſions that had occurred in his walk, all the money he had taken with him except *me*, who happened to ſtick in the corner of his pocket.

Temperance, exerciſe, and ſerenity of conſcience, inſured his repoſe: he fell aſleep the moment his head touched his pillow, nor awoke till his uſual early time of riſing the next morning, when he returned to the fatigue and perplexity of ſuch a multiplicity of affairs with a clear head and undiſmayed heart, and ſoon reduced the confuſion of them into ſuch order, as made their execution eaſy.

As the ſoldier had judged, the hour of battle was at hand. The King had ſcarce finiſhed the buſineſs of the morning, when an officer brought him an account, that the forces of the enemy were in motion. 'I expected it, (ſaid the King coolly); I knew they 'could not remain long in the ſituation they were in. 'But let us obſerve their motions, that we may re-'gulate ours by them.'

Then ordering ſome of his generals to follow him, he went to the top of a neighbouring houſe, from whence he could view them diſtinctly, where, having obſerved them attentively for ſome conſiderable time, 'It is done, my friends! (ſaid he, with a ſmile of joy 'that enlightened all his face); it is done! that laſt 'motion is what we wanted. Let us haſte and em-

'brace the opportunity which Heaven has put into 'our hands.'—Then, descending with an alacrity that inspired every beholder, he made his dispositions for the battle, and, putting himself at the head of his forces, marched directly against the enemy.

Descriptions of battles are never satisfactory: the confusion is too great, and the business of the scene too complex, to be brought into the regularity of any one design. I shall therefore only say, that my master was completely victorious; and to raise his own glory the higher, the victory was entirely gained by that part of his forces which he commanded in person; the excellent disposition he made of the rest, rendering it unnecessary for them to do more than stand spectators of the action, from the situation in which he placed them, while they prevented him from being surrounded by the enemy.

This victory was not gained without resistance: the field was long and obstinately disputed, and my master often obliged to lead his men to the charge: but numbers were at length forced to submit to superior valour; and the evening sun saw his banners wave in triumph, where those of his enemies had menaced his destruction in the morning.—If the intrepidity with which he flew from rank to rank, and exposed himself to every shape of death in the action, had struck me with astonishment, I was not less affected by his conduct after it was over; when, cooling instantly from that enthusiasm of courage, he gave his orders for securing the glorious advantage he had gained, for taking immediate care of the unhappy sufferers, both friends and enemies without distinction, and for refreshing his own laboured soldiers, with all the serenity of peace.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The happy fruits of victory. CHRYSAL *finds new reason to admire his master. A stranger throws himself at his feet to implore justice. The story of the stranger.*

THE transactions succeeding this event were but the common occurrences on such occasions, in which there is always something so cruel in the triumphs of the victors, and so severe in the sufferings of the vanquished, that, to a being free from the contradictory phrenzies of mankind, the very thought is painful.——His Majesty's next care, after returning public thanks to Heaven, on the very spot where its favour had been so signal, was to reward the behaviour of his soldiers: he praised, he promoted; he gave money to them, according to their different ranks and dispositions. Nor was his justice more bounteous in the reward of merit, than severe in the punishment of the want of it.

Under such a leader, what forces could withstand his soldiers? Under the discerning eye of such a Prince, who was not actuated with ambition to distinguish himself in the execution of his duty to obtain his favour? who dared to be guilty of disobedience or neglect, to incur his wrath?

From the field of battle, the victorious army was directly marched away to a siege, their success in which, was to open them an opportunity of attacking another army of the enemy with advantage.

Such a round of carnage was so shocking, that the virtues of my master were not a balance to the horrors of his service, and I began to wish for a release from such a scene of *glory*, when an unexpected occasion showed me his character in a light that raised my admiration of him still higher.

As he was riding along the lines of his camp, the morning after the battle, reviewing a body of forces which he was detaching on a particular expedition, a man, in the habit of a private soldier, threw himself proſtrate acroſs his way, crying, '*Mercy! O great King! have mercy on the ſufferings of a wretch in deſpair, and ſhow yourſelf the ſubſtitute of Heaven by impartial juſtice.*'—The guards and attendants on the King would have ſpurned the ſuppliant out of the way; but his Majeſty, ſtruck with the ſtrangeneſs of the addreſs, and imagining it muſt proceed from ſome extraordinary cauſe, interpoſed, and, bidding him ariſe, 'What is the grievance you complain of? (ſaid he, with a placid look and encouraging accent), or againſt whom do you ſo ſolemnly implore juſtice?'

'O, great and good King, (replied the ſtranger, with an air that beſpoke ſomething above his preſent appearance), my griefs are too many, to be told ſo concisely as your preſent ſituation demands; and the juſtice I implore will require time, to diveſt nature of its ſtrongeſt paſſions.'—'What can this mean? (ſaid the Monarch in ſurpriſe); meet me directly at my tent, and expect that juſtice which the ſimplicity of truth ſhall be entitled to, without theſe laboured exclamations.'—The buſineſs which his mind was intent upon, prevented the King's thinking any more of this affair, till he ſaw the man at his return to his tent; when, calling to him, 'Now, (ſaid he), ſpeak your griefs with the boldneſs, but alſo with the guard of truth, and doubt not the redreſs of juſtice.'—Encouraged by theſe words, the ſtranger, bowing his head, and pauſing a moment, as if to ſupport his grief, began thus: 'So may the ear of Heaven be ever open to thy petitions, O gracious King, as thou haſt readily vouchſafed to hear my cries! ſo may its juſtice redreſs thy wrongs, as thou ſhalt deal with mine. Thou

'ſeeſt

'feeſt before thee the moſt wretched of mankind, 'whom deſpair has reduced to the neceſſity of flying 'from the defence of his country, and imploring 'juſtice for his private wrongs from the declared 'foe of my ſovereign. But let me not waſte your 'time with fruitleſs complaints. My name, though 'ſpoken with ſome reſpect in my native country, is 'too obſcure to have reached your ears, as my an-'ceſtors wiſely confined their virtues to private life, 'nor ever laboured to emblazon their names with 'titles, that too often mar the happineſs of their 'owners.

'In their ſteps I trod, till the wrath of Heaven 'kindled the ambition of princes, and my country 'became the theatre of their contention. I then 'thought it my duty to ariſe in its defence; and the 'juſtice of my motive drew ſucceſs on my attempts. 'But, while I vainly indulged the hope of being in-'ſtrumental in delivering my country from the hor-'rors of war, a foe broke into my houſe, thus deſti-'tute of its defender, and rifled all the treaſure of 'my ſoul. O, my unhappy wife! my newly wed-'ded, beauteous wife! In vain didſt thou call upon 'me in the hour of thy diſtreſs, when the hand of 'the raviſher was twiſted in thine hair, and the hor-'ror of immediate ruin took poſſeſſion of thy ſoul! 'Thy protector was away, buſied in the defence of 'others, while the wolf was ravaging his deſerted 'fold.

'But whither does my diſtraction hurry me? O 'pardon, gracious Monarch, the inconſiſtencies of 'deſpair! I will be brief; I will not treſpaſs on thy 'precious time.'—He pauſed then a moment, till a flood of tears eaſed the fulneſs of his heart, and then proceeded thus:

'In the irruption of thy troops into *Bohemia*, about 'ſix months ago, my unhappy fortune led a party 'of them to my houſe, where the induſtry of my

'anceſtors,

ancestors, for ages of peace, fell a sacrifice to the wantonness of unrestrained devastation in one moment. But I complain not of this. It was my share of the indiscriminate calamity. Alas! my woes are of another nature.

'The beauty of my wife struck the very hardened hearts of the soldiers with such reverence, that, in the fury of their outrage, they dared not to lay a sacrilegious hand on her: but this safeguard that protected her from rapine, only raised the more audacious rage of lust against her. The officer who commanded the party, no sooner saw her, than, inflamed with brutal desire, he hurried her away with him to the camp, where imagination shrinks in horror, from the thought of what she may have suffered.

'The news of my misfortune soon reached me; no restraints of military duty were of force to hold me a moment; I flew to the scene of my ruin, where, having learned what I have now related to you, the greatness of my grief stupified me for a time, till the thought of my wife's being still alive, and in the possession of her ravisher, roused me to a resolution of labouring for her relief. I therefore immediately entered in disguise into those very troops, which had perpetrated my ruin, as I despaired of eluding the vigilance of thy officers by any other means. My stratagem had success; I soon learned that the officer, who had brought my wife from my house, had been obliged to give her up to his general, who had demanded her, as soon as she had been brought to the camp.

'A dawn of hope broke in upon me: though I could not gain any account of her after this, I thought that a man, honoured with your particular esteem, must be possessed of virtue, and this I knew must be her protection.

'Big

'Big with this hope, I found means to rejoin my 'own corps, where my abſence was eaſily excuſed 'to a general who was my friend, and who readily 'yielded to my requeſt of ſending a trumpet with a 'letter to enquire for ſuch a lady, and to deſire that 'ſhe might be treated with the tenderneſs and reſpect 'due to her ſex and beauty, till ſhe ſhould be re-'ſtored to her friends.

'But all my fond hopes fell to the ground, when 'an anſwer was returned, that the general knew not 'of ſuch a perſon. Deſpair now ſtared me in the 'face; I ſaw all the horrors of my condition; and 'would that inſtant have returned in my diſguiſe, and 'ſtabbed the raviſher at the head of his forces, had 'I not reflected, that my *Theodora* might be only 'expoſed by ſuch an action, to new inſults, and her 'life perhaps ſacrificed, in torture and ignominy, to 'revenge.

'While I fluctuated in this diſtreſs, Heaven in-'ſpired me with the thought of having recourſe to 'your juſtice. Though he is the enemy of my ſo-'vereign, ſaid I, he is a *man*, who feels the tender 'impulſe of humanity; he is a *King*, who delights 'in juſtice! I therefore reaſſumed my diſguiſe, and 'entered into your camp, as a deſerter, the night 'before this battle, in which, inſtinctive abhor-'rence of cowardice, urged me to the duty of a 'ſoldier, and I happened to fight near your perſon; 'where, though I was ſenſible of my crime, in 'aſſiſting the enemy of my ſovereign, I had this 'palliative conſolation, that the forces I engaged 'were not my fellow ſubjects, but thoſe of a per-'fidious ally, who entered into the war only to take 'his own advantage, when a proper opportunity 'ſhould offer.

'This, O gracious King, is my unhappy ſtory; 'this is the grievance for which I implore thy juſ-'tice; for which I fought againſt the allies of my

'ſovereign

'sovereign yesterday; for which I threw myself be-
'fore your horse's feet this morning; for which I
'now call upon you by that power, who has placed
'you as his substitute on earth, and will require an
'account of thy stewardship. O justice! justice!
'justice!'

CHAP. V.

The King sends for the general, and orders the stranger to be confined till his arrival. Continuation of the story of the stranger. A new trial of the King's fortitude and activity of soul.

THE King heard out the stranger's story without interruption, and then addressing himself to his officers and attendants round him, 'How un-
'happy (said he) is the condition of princes, who
'must be answerable for the crimes of their servants,
'as if every man's own were not more than he can
'bear.

'I thought this man as upright as I knew him
'brave; I thought justice and mercy attempered
'valour in his breast. But perhaps he is wronged;
'let us not judge too hastily. Go, (turning to one
'of his officers) bid him come to me directly, nor
'tell him a word of the occasion: if he is guilty,
'he has forfeited my esteem for ever; but if this
'complaint is only a calumny, devised to exasperate
'me against one of my best friends, severely shall
'the author of it feel that justice, which he so so-
'lemnly implores. Let him therefore be taken
'into custody, till the event decides the doubt;
'but let him be treated with that humanity, which
'his apparent distress stands in need of; nor let
'any hardship or indignity, give justice the ap-
'pearance

'pearance of prejudice, or ſeem to intimidate his 'reſolution.'

He then retired to enjoy thoſe few moments of his life, which privacy enabled him to call his own.

His Majeſty's commands were ſo punctually obeyed, that the general arrived at the camp the very next day, where he immediately waited on his maſter, who received him with his uſual familiarity; and having conferred with him, for ſome time, on the ſituation of the affairs under his care, he led him to the door of his tent, where he had ordered the ſtranger to be brought to confront him, and then ſpoke thus, as if in continuation of his former diſcourſe: 'It has ever been my ſtrongeſt wiſh, my 'moſt poſitive command, that the calamities of this 'neceſſary war, ſhould fall as light as poſſible on the 'innocent ſubjects of thoſe powers who have pro-'voked it; particularly, I have always enjoined the 'ſtricteſt care to avoid every unneceſſary deva-ſtation 'of private property, every appearance of cruelty, 'or ill treatment to the defenceleſs weakneſs of the 'aged, of women, and children. What then muſt 'be my grief to find theſe orders diſobeyed? to find, 'that the ruins of the poor, mark the marches of my 'armies, and the cries of private anguiſh ariſe to 'heaven againſt me? But theſe enormities ſhall not 'ly on my head, for neglect of puniſhing them; nor 'be perſiſted in, on the hope of impunity. Were my 'right hand guilty of ſuch crimes, I would cut it 'off with my left, rather than it ſhould infect my 'mind.'

The ſolemnity with which the King ſpoke theſe words, ſtruck all preſent with terror for *the accuſed*, who alone was ignorant of their deſign. The King ſaw the general concern; and, to let the impreſſion ſink the deeper, he pauſed ſome moments before he proceeded: then, turning ſhort upon the general, with a determined look, and awful voice, 'Tell me

'(ſaid he) where is the woman, whom thou hadſt 'from the officer who brought her to the camp, when 'the forces under thy command entered into *Bo-* '*hemia?* the woman whom the *Bohemian* general ſent 'to inquire after in vain, and whom, I fear, thou 'didſt deny, and ſtill detaineſt, for purpoſes too baſe 'to mention?'

The unexpectedneſs of this charge deprived the unhappy criminal of all preſence of mind: he ſtood abaſhed, and the confuſion of his looks too plainly betrayed his guilt. The king ſaw his diſtreſs with the greateſt concern; but, ſuperior to every private regard that could interfere with his ſublimer character, 'Tell 'me where ſhe is this inſtant! (ſaid he.) nor aggra- 'vate by falſehood, crimes already too flagrant; for 'I will know the whole of this black affair.'

'O ſire! (replied the general, throwing himſelf 'at his feet) I acknowledge my crime; but I cannot 'bear thy wrath: let me die this moment; let that 'puniſhment expiate my guilt; but afflict me no long- 'er with thy diſpleaſure, which is heavier than I 'can bear.'—'Where is the woman? ſpeak!'—'Safe 'and inviolate in my tent. My intreaties have not 'been able to prevail on her virtue; and my paſſion 'was too delicate to ſeek gratification by force.'—— 'This moment let her be ſent for! and let the cauſe 'of her coming be concealed from her: I will learn 'the truth of this ſtrange affair from herſelf. In the 'mean time, let her huſband be treated with tender- 'neſs and reſpect. His misfortunes deſerve com- 'paſſion.'

The King had ſcarce ſaid this, when an expreſs arrived from another of his armies, which guarded his own dominions from the calamities of war, to inform him, that they had been repulſed with great loſs, in an attack upon the army of the enemy, which was now in full march to his capital.—'Thy will be done, 'O God, (ſaid the King) thy will be done.'—And then,

then, without any appearance of ſurpriſe, or alteration in his looks, he inſtantly gave orders for a ſtrong detachment of the army under his own command, to march to the reinforcement of that which had ſuffered this loſs; and retired to conſider of the alterations which this event muſt neceſſarily occaſion in the operations of the campaign, and write his ſeveral orders accordingly, for he was his own ſecretary.

But though his looks were thus eaſy, his heart ſeverely felt this misfortune: 'O God (ſaid he, as ſoon 'as he was alone) when will thy wrath be appeaſed? 'When ſhall this people have reſt? If *I* am the unhappy object of it, O let it fall on my head alone, 'but ſpare them! There is nothing certain in this 'life; nothing worth a wiſe man's care or regard: 'the victory with which it pleaſed thee to bleſs our 'arms ſo lately, raiſed my hopes to a proſpect of 'peace. But the ſcene is now changed; and this 'advantage will raiſe the pride and malice of our enemies ſtill higher, and make new deluges of blood 'neceſſary, to bring them to a ſenſe of reaſon and 'juſtice. Thy will be done, O Lord; but as it is 'not yet declared, it is our duty to make uſe of the 'means which thou haſt put into our power, to accompliſh that end, which appears to us moſt juſt 'and advantageous. The horrors of war are ready 'to burſt upon my country, after all my endeavours 'to ſave it, and divert them elſewhere. But they 'ſhall not, unoppoſed; I myſelf will ſtand in the 'breach, and defend my native country.'

The ſerenity in the looks of the King, had deceived the fears of the army, and every one prepared to obey him with the greateſt alacrity: and though this affair put the whole camp in motion, it occaſioned neither diſorder nor confuſion. Active as light, the King *was* every where, *ordered* every thing, *ſaw* every thing prepared, as well for the convenience of his ſoldiers, as for the greateſt poſſible expedition of

their march. His armies might be vanquiſhed, for they were but men; but to deject or diſorder *his* mind, was not in the power of any event.

CHAP. VI.

Concluſion of the ſtory of the ſtranger. His wife arrives and acquits the general. The king's ſpeech to him, and generoſity to the ſtrangers. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, and goes with them. Some general remarks on the character of the king of* BULGARIA, *and the probable conſequences of the war.*

BY this time the *Bohemian* lady arrived, whom the King ordered to be brought directly to his tent. The firſt ſight of this woman raiſed emotions in his heart, which it had long been a ſtranger to. A beauty that exceeded imagination, and a ſweetneſs and expreſſion in her looks beyond deſcrition, ſoon made him ſenſible, that all his heroiſm could not eradicate the paſſions of nature, and raiſed his pity, both for the unfortunate general, and for her huſband.

He ſtood ſome moments gazing at her in ſilent aſtoniſhment; but recollecting himſelf ſoon, he addreſſed her thus, with the higheſt complacency and reſpect in his look and accent. 'I have ſent for you, 'madam, to this important place, for the deliverance 'of your ſex, to learn from yourſelf, the manner of 'your having been brought away from *Bohemia*, and 'the cauſe of your being ſince detained by the general 'of my army. Speak, madam; have you ſuffered 'any violence, any uſage improper for your ſex and 'merit? ſpeak with the aſſurance of truth, and ex'pect juſtice and redreſs.'

'O mighty king, (ſaid the lady, proſtrating her'ſelf at his feet) oft have I heard of thy won-

'drous

drous virtues; but never till this moment could I think, that you could ſtoop ſo low, as to take notice of my wretchedneſs. My ſad ſtory is no more than this: I was torn from my houſe by an officer of your army; I was hurried away to the camp by him, and there inſulted by the offers of his love: but Heaven delivered me from him. Your general heard of my diſtreſs, and reſcued me from his power: ſince which time I have had no perſonal cauſe of complaint, beſide the indiſcriminate calamity of the wars, which have robbed me of my huſband, and left me a friendleſs widow in the hands of mine enemies.'—A flood of tears here ſtopped her utterance.

The king raiſing her from the ground, proceeded thus: 'A widow, madam, did you ſay? how long ſince you have loſt your huſband, and by what means did you hear of his death?'

'O Sire! (replied ſhe) as ſoon as I was freed from the horrors of brutal violence by the general, I wrote to my huſband with his permiſſion, but received no anſwer to many, very many letters. This ſuſpenſe was worſe than death, and almoſt drove me to deſpair; till the general at length, in compaſſion to my miſery, wrote himſelf to the commander of the army in which my huſband had ſerved, who returned him for anſwer, that he had been killed about the time I was taken priſoner. O! happy had been my lot; had I ſhared his fate!'

'I hope, madam, (ſaid the King), you have received no injuries, that make you weary of life: I hope my general has not miſbehaved himſelf to you?'

'O Sire! (replied ſhe), I have received no injuries, beſide the irreparable loſs of my huſband; after which I can have no deſire to live. As for the general, he has always treated me with the greateſt compaſſion and tenderneſs. But now will

'your Majesty hear the voice of affliction? Will you 'grant the only wish of an heart in despair? Let me 'be conveyed to some religious house, where I may 'devote the sad remnant of my days to the service of 'Heaven, far from the knowledge of the general, and 'every other person who has ever heard of my name. 'I am sensible of the presumption of troubling you 'with this request: but to whom should we fly in 'the moment of distress, except to Heaven or its 'vicegerents, especially those whose virtues give its 'seal to their authority?'

'You may depend (returned the King) upon ev'ery endeavour in my power to make you happy. 'But, madam, what meant the particular mention 'of the general, in your desire of being retired from 'the knowledge of the world? Pray be ingenuous; 'I hope he has not transgressed the limits of his own 'virtue, and my command?'

'O, Sire! (replied she), mistake not the incohe'rencies of distraction: the general has always treat'ed me with respect and tenderness; tenderness in 'excess, for nothing can be hid from you, was the 'only thing my soul could disapprove in his behavi'our. He offered me honourable love; but, alas, 'my husband! my dear husband, has possession of 'this heart! there he is buried! nor ever shall an'other love disturb his dear remembrance.'

'Madam, be comforted, (returned the King); 'such virtue as yours is the particular care of Hea'ven: you may be happy yet; your husband may 'be still alive: in the disorders of these unhappy 'times, many strange things happen; many who are 'thought to be alive, are long since dead; many 'who have been long thought to be dead, are found 'to be alive.'—'O Sire! what can your words im'port? you would not jest with misery! you cannot 'speak in vain! O, am I yet to hope, after so long 'despair?'

'despair?'—'Hope! always hope! but I shall send 'a proper person to explain my words.'

Saying this, the King went to the door of his tent, and, seeing her husband bursting with anxiety and impatience, he called him; 'Go (said he) in there, 'and see what blessings Heaven reserves for virtue; 'go in alone: such meltings of the soul as must attend your meeting, are too delicate to be exposed 'to other eyes.'

Then turning to the general, 'You have behaved 'nobly, my friend, (said he), in such temptation, 'which was almost too great for human virtue: had 'you injured such excellence, dear as you are to my 'heart, your life should have expiated the crime. 'But you have behaved nobly; in such a trial, it is 'virtue to refrain from vice; the errors you have 'fallen into, are but the weaknesses of nature; for to 'have been insensible to her beauty and perfections, 'would have argued a deficiency in humanity.— 'But beware, my friend, of indulging those pas'sions; they enervate the heart, and wean the soul 'insensibly from virtue: the example is before thine 'eyes: see how the violence of love has been able to 'urge the noble heart of this woman's husband to 'defeat his charge, to enter into the service of his 'enemies, to fight against the dictates of his own 'conscience: think of this, and be more cautious 'for the future; the heart of a soldier has not room 'for love.'

The general, unable to reply, threw himself at his feet, and embraced his knees. 'I understand 'you, (said the King, smiling); your passion is not 'quite cured; but you shall have employment to 'wear off this rust of idleness: return to your com'mand this moment, and expect my farther orders.'

The general obeyed; and the King, addressing those around him, 'To be without fault, (said he), 'were not to be a man; he is the best, who has the 'smallest;

'smalleſt; and allowance is to be made for human
'frailty, where the temptation is too great for hu-
'man virtue.'

As the King ſaid this, the ſtranger and his wife came out together, and, throwing themſelves at his feet, bedewed them with tears of grateful ecſtaſy. 'Ariſe, (ſaid the Monarch), and be happy in each 'other. I have reſtored you your wife, (ſaid he to 'the huſband), and am ready to do you every far-'ther inſtance of juſtice which you can demand.'

'My ſoul is ſatisfied, O gracious King! my ſoul 'is ſatisfied, (replied he): I aſk no more of Heaven; 'but to reward your goodneſs, your juſtice, and com-'paſſion.'

'But there is one thing more to be conſidered; '(ſaid the King); your eſtate was waſted, your 'houſes burned by my ſoldiers. I do not know the 'loſs you may have ſuffered. Take this, (giving him 'a large purſe of gold); if that is not ſufficient to 'repair it, when Heaven, in mercy to mankind, ſhall 'bid the calamities of war to ceaſe, if my life is 'ſpared, come to me, and I will remove every cauſe 'of your complaint. I do not aſk you to enter into 'my ſervice in this war; but if your honour, your 'conſcience oppoſe it not, you may expect every en-'couragement due to your merit.'

'O Sire! it is too much! your goodneſs over-'whelms me! I will retire from the ſeat of war: I 'will implore Heaven for your happineſs and ſafety; 'and though I cannot, may not fight for you, my 'arm ſhall never more be raiſed againſt you.'

His wife and he then withdrew to prepare for their departure, leaving the King no leſs happy, in being the author of their happineſs, than his goodneſs and bounty had made them.—I here quitted the ſervice of this great Prince, being in the purſe which he gave to the ſtranger. The happineſs which this pair experienced, in being thus unexpectedly reſtored to

each,

each other, is not to be expreſſed; the delicacy of their love being as much too ſublime for deſcription, as the ſenſuality of other ſcenes was beneath it. In a word, they wanted, they wiſhed for nothing more; and, to ſecure the poſſeſſion of what they enjoyed, they reſolved to go and live privately with his brother, an eccleſiaſtic in *Vienna*, till the war ſhould be at an end, and they might with ſafety return to their own country. This reſolution was ſoon taken; they applied for paſſports that evening, and left the camp the next morning.

Sick as I was of ſuch a ſcene of blood, I own I could not leave this Prince without reluctance. I ſee you are deſirous that I ſhould give you a character of him; but I muſt not gratify your curioſity. What I have told you of his actions, may convince you that he is the greateſt of men: but humanity is too frail, to be able to form any definitive judgment, from his paſt, of his future life. Succeſs may elevate, misfortune may ſour his mind, and ſo overthrow that equality of it, which now raiſes him almoſt above man. His enemies are numerous and inveterate; his friends few, and hardly to be relied on; ſo that his dependence is ſolely on the attachment of his own ſubjects, on the ſtrength of his own ſoul.

What will be the event of his fortune, is not permitted me to conjecture: this only I muſt ſay, that, if he falls, it had been better for his country, for *Europe* in general, that he had never been born; as his ſtruggles will exhauſt their ſtrength, and leave them an eaſy prey to a foe, *(the Turk)*, whoſe ſilence makes them not apprehenſive of him, but who laughs in his heart to ſee them thus do his work, and deſtroy againſt each other the forces which might prevent his adding them to the number of the nations which already groan under his yoke. A deſign which he certainly meditates, and will not loſe a moment to

put

put in execution, when the opportunity he watches for is ripe.

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* VIENNA, *where he meets an old acquaintance. The history of his master's brother. His mission, labours, and success in* ENGLAND. *He is sent to* PERU. *He disapproves of the precipitancy of the measures carried on there, and returns to* EUROPE *to prepare matters better.*

IF the immediate scene of the war was shocking, the appearance of the countries around it was rather worse. In the former, the hurry of action kept the mind too busy to attend to every minute distress: but here a dismal desolation opened a field for melancholy reflection, which every object added horrors to. The lands laid waste; the villages in ashes; the inhabitants perishing, in the fields and high-roads, of wounds, sickness, famine, and every various kind of misery which the madness of human nature can inflict upon itself.

Through such monuments of military glory did we travel to *Vienna*, where my master and his wife were received with open arms by his brother, who insisted on their living in his house. The scene was here changed, from the tumults and wants of war, to all the luxury and ease of peace.

The moment I saw this ecclesiastic, I knew him to have been a member of the convent, to the head of which I had belonged in *Peru*. This unexpected meeting, at such a distance, raised a curiosity to know the cause of his removal from a place where I thought I had left him settled in all the happiness which riches and sensual pleasures could afford.

In

It was not long before this curiosity was gratified; for, the very evening after my master's arrival, he led him to a walk in his garden, and, sitting down under a tree, on the brink of a fountain, addressed him thus:

'It is many years, my dearest brother, since I had 'the happiness of seeing you last. Various have 'been the climates I have gone through; various 'the vicissitudes of my fortune since that day: from 'despair to exultation; from royal affluence and 'power, to apprehension of perishing by famine, or 'in a prison. Wonder not at my words: I will ex-'plain them to you in a short view of my life, which 'it is necessary I should give you, to prepare you 'for the participation of secrets, in which your as-'sistance may be employed, in establishing the most 'extensive and firm power which ever yet was raised 'on this globe.—You may remember, though you 'were then very young, that the representation of 'the *Jesuit*, to whose care our education was com-'mitted, made such an impression upon me, that, in 'despite of my father's threats and intreaties, I re-'nounced my patrimony in your favour, and, taking 'only a small sum of money to defray the expences 'of my journey, went directly to *Rome* with my ti-'tor, where I readily obtained admission into *the* 'Society of Jesus, as soon as I had gone through the 'usual preparatory forms of education.

'Nothing remarkable happened to me during the 'first years of my being professed, my studies engros-'sing my whole time and attention, in which I made 'such a proficiency, that the general of the order 'thought it proper to send me into the world in the 'service of the society.

'The first stage of my mission was to *England*, 'whither I went, to counteract the poison which was 'dispensing against us by an apostate of our order, 'who, under the pretence of employing his abilities

'in

'in the ſervice of the ſociety, had been admitted to 'all the libraries, and ſuffered to take extracts from 'all the records of the church. But no ſooner had 'he made ſuch a collection as he thought ſufficient 'for his purpoſe, than he fled *to England*, his native 'country, where, renouncing his vows and religion, 'he turned the weapons which had been entruſted 'in his hands, for the defence of the church, againſt 'her, employing the abſtracts he had made, to the 'defamation of the character, and ſubverſion of the 'power of the *Holy See*.

'My ſucceſs in this my firſt negociation, (for in 'defiance of truth, reaſon, conſcience, and common 'ſenſe, by plauſible inſinuations, by forged certifi-'cates, or, which was the ſame thing, by certificates 'from people who would certify any thing in their 'own favour, againſt a man who attacked the very 'fundamentals of their power; by bribery, ſuborna-'tion, perjury, and every kind of artifice, I, in a great 'meaſure, defeated his deſign, and overturned the 'authority of his work); my ſucceſs, I ſay, in this 'difficult undertaking, for he had gone out from a-'mong ourſelves, and was verſed in our whole ſci-'ence, encouraged the order to continue me in that 'miſſion, but in an higher office.

'The laws, religion, and government of the na-'tion, were now the objects aſſigned to my attacks, 'in which I laboured with various ſucceſs for ſome 'years, in every character which human volubility 'could aſſume. I was a quaker, a methodiſt, a 'deiſt; I wrote for the miniſtry, or againſt the go-'vernment, as the prevailing humour of the day pro-'miſed attention to my writings; the ſea which 'flows around that iſland being not more unſteady 'than the minds of the inhabitants, nor more liable 'to be ruffled by the winds of heaven, than they by 'every breath of popular rumour.

'I proceeded

'I proceeded thus for some time with various success, till, happening to disclose some secret transactions, which were known there only to the persons concerned, and had been communicated to me from abroad, in order to sow dissension between the people and their governors, to the ruin of both; the conscious parties were alarmed, and my intelligence traced so secretly, that I had difficulty to escape by flight from an ignominious death, which the resentment of those whose ruinous machinations I had thus discovered to their country, would certainly have brought me to.

'My failing in this attempt, in which thousands had failed before me, was no prejudice to my character, nor in the least lessened me in the opinion of the order; on the contrary, the efforts I had made were so daring, so deeply laid, and so well conducted, that I was now judged a proper person to be employed in greater matters.

'I was therefore sent the next year to what is called *the Spanish* world, but is really *the Jesuits* heaven in *America*, where matters of the highest moment were just ripe for execution.——When I came there, I found things in a forwardness too great for their foundation, the eagerness of some of our people hurrying on events, before proper preparation had insured their success. In short, they were ready to revolt from *Spain* and *Portugal*, before they had made provision to support themselves in such an attempt. They wanted European officers, soldiers, arms, and ammunition; for on the natives there is no dependence; but, above all, the time was unfavourable. The powers they meant to attack in this vital part, were at peace with all the world, and consequently at liberty to turn their whole force against them.

'I therefore counselled them to moderate their zeal, and wait till better preparations, and a more

'favourable minute, ſhould make their ſucceſs more 'probable. But they would not hearken to my ad-'vice, but attributed it to envy, or want of reſolu-'tion; on which I left them to their own ill fortune, 'and haſted home, to provide a remedy for evils 'which I could not prevent.'

CHAP. VIII.

Continuation of the Jeſuit's diſcourſe. He ſhews the promiſing ſituation of his affairs at preſent. The conciſe method by which SPAIN *and* PORTUGAL *are to be brought into the war with* ENGLAND. *He propoſes to his brother to join in the general, that he may accompliſh his particular deſign.*

'THE event has confirmed my opinion: by 'ſtriking too ſoon, the blow has been ineffec-'tual. But things, however diſconcerted by this 'precipitancy, are not quite ruined; and care may 'yet repair the effects of their folly.

'In this cauſe I now labour, in concert with o-'thers of my brethren, in every court of *Europe*; 'and I have the ſatisfaction to think that we have 'a proſpect of ſucceſs. The only obſtacle that 'retards us at preſent, is the difficulty of making 'the courts of *Spain* and *Portugal* enter into the 'war againſt *England*. Could we bring this to 'bear, our work would be eaſy. The mighty na-'val power of *England*, will not only prevent 'their ſending over forces to oppreſs us, before we 'can eſtabliſh our power, but will alſo aſſiſt us to 'carry on the war, to ſhare in the ſpoil, and diſtreſs 'their enemies.

'But while the preſent kings are on the thrones 'of thoſe kingdoms, it will ſcarcely be poſſible to

'bring

'bring our designs to perfection, they are so utterly averse to hazarding the consequences of a war, 'with a nation from whose alliance they receive such 'advantages.—The first thing, therefore, which we 'do, must be to remove them. The former has already swallowed his death, though the process 'will be so slow as to escape suspicion: with the other, such caution is not necessary, nor is there time 'for it.

'The arm is already lifted against him, for a 'stroke that will terrify the world.

'When these obstacles are removed, the execution of our designs will meet with no farther delay. The successors to those princes we have 'secured such an influence on, that we can work 'them to whatever we please, and have already 'poisoned their minds with prejudices against *England* *.

'To provide officers of approved fidelity and experience to command our forces, is the next object 'of our care. Shall I candidly own to you, that 'such a length of time, and multiplicity of affairs 'had almost obliterated all the remembrance of my 'family: but, the moment I heard your name mentioned, with the respect due to your merits in the 'present war, a flood of infant fondness melted my 'heart, and tears of tenderest joy acknowleged that 'I had a brother. I immediately gave notice to our 'general, and, by his order, am empowered to treat 'thus with you.

'On my engagement for your fidelity, for your 'abilities are known to be far superior to any that 'shall oppose you, I am commissioned to offer you 'the supreme command of all our forces in this 'great undertaking. With what joy I make this

* The conduct of the present King of *Spain*, hitherto shews that the Jesuit had formed a wrong opinion of him at least.

'offer, the pleaſure that you would feel in ſerving
'your brother, can beſt enable you to judge.

'Though I will tell you farther, that mine is
'raiſed higher than common feelings can convey a
'notion of. I have hitherto unfolded only the
'general deſign of our order, in which I am but a
'party, though a principal and material one. But
'ſhall I tell you alſo, that my deſigns terminate not
'with their's: as your command will make you maſ-
'ter of all their force, and as power is the con-
'ſequence of that, you will be able to confer it
'where you pleaſe; or, indeed, rather to retain it
'in your own hands, while I ſhall only eaſe you of
'the trouble of conducting and eſtabliſhing the policy
'of an infant ſtate.

'This was my motive for writing to you, ſo preſ-
'ſingly, to come to me to *Vienna*. This is the end
'which I have been labouring for all my life. I am
'advanced in years, and ſhall never marry to beget
'an heir: you are young, and will have many. Aſſiſt
'me therefore to acquire a throne, which muſt de-
'ſcend to your poſterity; a throne, which, by hold-
'ing it at firſt, as under the ſovereignty of the order,
'will ſoon be eſtabliſhed by them, even beyond their
'own power to ſhake.

'I have now unboſomed myſelf to my brother,
'with all the confidence of ſo near an alliance. You
'will perhaps wonder at my openneſs, with one
'whom I have not ſeen ſince he was a child. But I
'know your character in life: and, above all, I
'know myſelf ſafe from being betrayed, becauſe the
'information would not be received.

'Conſider, therefore, whether you will embrace
'this offer; whether you will reign in a ſplendour
'that would dazzle the eyes of the greateſt prince
'in Europe, or live here in ſlavery and dependence.
'The alternative will not admit a moment's heſitation.
'I ſee you yield. I will acquaint our general with

'it;

'it; you and your wife ſhall remain here with me, 'till the proper time for all our departure comes, 'which will depend on circumſtances not yet ſettled. 'In the mean time, we ſhall have an opportunity of 'conferring on theſe ſubjects together, and preparing 'all things for our undertaking, in a manner that 'ſhall enſure ſucceſs.'

Though my maſter made no reply to this propoſal, that teſtified the leaſt diſapprobation of it, I could eaſily ſee that many parts of the ſcheme affected him with the ſtrongeſt abhorrence; at the ſame time that the offer of royalty, was a temptation that ſhook his reſolution, and almoſt vanquiſhed his virtue.

His brother ſaw the conflict in his ſoul with pleaſure: had he yielded readily, and without reluctance, he ſhould have withdrawn his confidence from ſuch a depravity of ſoul; and the ſtruggle convinced him that he was his own, as he knew that the man, as well as the woman who deliberates between virtue and vice, is loſt.

CHAP. IX.

The Jeſuit proceeds to ſhew the riſe of the war in GERMANY, *and explains the motives of the ſeveral parties engaged in it, as alſo of the neutrality obſerved by ſome particular ſtates.*

THE Jeſuit the next morning reſumed the converſation; and, to remove every doubt of ſucceſs that might deter his brother from joining in his deſigns, proceeded thus:

'My brother, (ſaid he) there is nothing ſo diſguſting to a rational man, as the miſtakes and blunders 'which paſſion, prejudice, pride and ignorance, pro-

'duce, in the conduct of all the courts in the world, 'even ours at *Rome* not being quite exempt from 'them, though the freeſt of all others. As for this 'of *Vienna*, it is at preſent a ſcene, where every 'abſurd, every deſtructive paſſion rules.—Among 'theſe muſt you ſeek for the ſources of the preſent 'war, that lays all *Germany* waſte: Female pride, 'piqued by ſome ſlighting expreſſions, from one eſ-'teemed inferior in rank, and ſtimulated by a deſire 'of recovering by ſurpriſe, what had been yielded, 'or rather extorted by treaty, influenced this ſa-'gacious court, in conjunction with that of *Saxony*, 'to form deſigns againſt the king of *Bulgaria*: but 'the vigilance of that monarch prevented their de-'ſigns, of which he had timely notice; and, before 'their ſchemes were ripe for execution, he boldly 'attacked them, and ſo anticipated the blow medi-'tated againſt him.

'So daring a ſtep ſurpriſed all *Europe*, and influen-'ced many, who were unacquainted with the motives 'of it, to take part againſt him, while more did it 'for private advantage.—Of theſe, *France* was the 'firſt; who, concluding a league with her ancient 'enemy, in deſpight of family animoſity, has enter-'ed into a war, that ſeems not to concern her at all; 'nor indeed does it in the obvious conſequences of it: 'but ſhe has farther deſigns in view, and, in return 'for the aſſiſtance ſhe gives to cruſh this prince, is to 'receive from the houſe of *Auſtria* thoſe dominions 'in the *Netherlands*, which have coſt the greateſt part 'of *Europe* ſuch deluges of blood, for above a cen-'tury, to keep out of her hands; while this court, 'inattentive to the conſequences that muſt attend 'France's getting poſſeſſion of theſe long-conteſted 'places, has blindly, baſely entered into a league 'with a family, that has been labouring her ruin for 'ſo many ages; and betrayed the confidence of all 'the ſtates who have ſupported her in them. The

'other

'other nations who have acceded to this alliance, have 'acted from motives merely mercenary in the first 'view, fighting for the pay promised them by the '*Imperial* and *French* courts, the latter of whom has 'stretched her generosity so far, as to undertake sup-'porting her new ally with money, as well as men.

'But it is not improbable, that they may all be 'disappointed, and the king of *Bulgaria* not only 'escape the ruin meditated against him, but also re-'tort it on the machinators; one of the principal of 'whom, the *Saxon*, has already had abundant cause 'to repent of his undertaking. As for this court, 'it now fights *pro aris & focis*, as may be said; for 'if that hero is victorious, nothing less is to be ex-'pected here, than the total loss of the imperial dig-'nity, of whose authority there want not many in-'stances of the most flagrant abuse, to vindicate such 'a revolution.

'But of all the effects of this most unnatural com-'bination, there is not one more base, than the ingra-'titude with which this court has behaved to that of '*England*, whose blood and treasure have often sup-'ported it against the power of *France*, when every 'other human assistance had deserted it; and esta-'blished it in its present grandeur, almost at the price 'of its own ruin.—But now, all those benefits are for-'got; and because *England* will not tamely look on, '(if not perhaps assist) to see the fabric, which she 'has erected at so vast an expence, overturned to gra-'tify a blind caprice, and a prince, allied to her by 'blood and interest, sacrificed to avarice and pride, 'all her former services are held as cancelled, and 'herself treated with the rancour of the greatest e-'nemy.

'While *England* thus supports her character of 'generosity, and acts with prudence; the *Dutch*, as 'if infatuated, stand quietly to see the *barrier*, which 'cost themselves even so much in erecting for their

'defence,

'defence, thus given away to every power againſt
'whom it was erected, and who, they cannot be
'inſenſible, means nothing leſs than their ruin, as
'ſoon as it can ſtrike the blow to effect. But ſuch is
'the degeneracy of that people from every ſenti-
'ment of virtue, public and private, that they will
'not give up the opportunity of preſent gain, to ſave
'their ſtate from ſo evident, ſo imminent ruin; vain-
'ly perhaps expecting, that *England* will ſtill pur-
'ſue the ſchemes of *knight-errantry*, which have ſo
'long made her fight the quarrels of her neighbours,
'while they themſelves looked on almoſt as if uncon-
'cerned in the event; and will be moved by the cries
'of the *diſtreſſed ſtates*, to remedy the miſtakes, and
'repair the loſſes of their *High Mightineſſes*.

'While every other ſtate in *Europe* is thus employ-
'ed, *Spain* and *Portugal* enjoy all the advantages of
'peace, prudently taking no part in a war which
'does not in the leaſt concern them. Of theſe, the
'former, like the old lion in the fable, is only ter-
'rible to ignorant apprehenſion, on account of what
'it has been; and is now pacific and harmleſs, becauſe
'it no longer has the power of doing harm. Senſi-
'ble of this weakneſs, it ſleeps in the ſhadow of a
'mighty name, and mixes not in diſputes which muſt
'only draw it into difficulties, without any proſpect
'of advantage to engage it in the attempt. But it
'muſt not be left to enjoy this ſtate of tranquillity, ſo
'contrary to our deſigns, any longer; and as the
'preſent government there is determined to perſiſt in
'the meaſures that ſupport it, it muſt be overturned
'to make way for thoſe who will be more obedient
'to our advice.

'A method which we muſt alſo purſue with *Por-*
'*tugal*; for though its ſtrength is almoſt beneath the
'rank of an independent, much leſs a royal ſtate,
'yet, upon the account of its wealth, which might
'hire forces to oppreſs us, it muſt be worked up to

'take

'take the ſame ſtep, and break with *England*, as I 'have ſaid before, to which it has already made 'large advances, by ſeveral moſt unjuſt and injudi- 'cious encroachments on the trade of that nation.

'As for the war between *France* and *England*, it 'ariſes ſolely from the contradiction between the in- 'tereſts of the two nations, which nature has ſet in 'an oppoſition impoſſible to be reconciled. But the 'ſeat of this war is ſo remote from hence, that it 'would have no influence on the affairs of *Europe*, 'did not the ſucceſſes of the *Engliſh* prevent *France* 'from giving the aſſiſtance that was expected, and 'might be effectual to the deſigns of this court; for 'they have ſo abſolutely ruined her trade, that ſhe is 'no longer able to fulfil her engagements with *Ruſſia* 'particularly, and the ſeveral courts of *Germany*, 'whom ſhe undertook to pay, for fighting the quar- 'rel of her ally; ſo that the former, who had no 'other motive but the money, for entering into the 'war at firſt, will of courſe, and the latter muſt of 'neceſſity, deſert that cauſe, not having any internal 'ſupport of their own, ſince this has failed them. 'Indeed the *Ruſſians*, finding all the mighty promiſes 'which were made them vaniſh into air, begin to be 'ſick of their bargain already, and long again for 'the ſolid advantages of their alliance with *England*. 'As for this court, it is now making its laſt effort; 'and if this is eluded or defeated, it has no other re- 'ſource, than ſhamefully to receive law from a 'Prince, upon whom it made ſo unjuſt an attempt.'

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Conclusion of the Jesuit's discourse. His systems of morality and religion. His brother yields to his arguments, with some particular exceptions. CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

'THIS short but distinct view of the present situation of the affairs of *Europe*, must convince you, that a general peace must soon be concluded, the parties that would, not being able to continue the war much longer; and therefore *we* must be speedy in the execution of our designs, or the opportunity will be lost: for it would be impossible to make even the pride of *Spain*, or the avarice of *Portugal*, take the measures we want, at a time when *England* is disengaged from any other enemies. I have drawn this sketch to show you, that our designs are not rashly undertaken, but the result of the deepest knowledge and insight into things. This must remove every scruple that may arise from doubt of success.—But there is one thing more which must be explained, to remove prejudices of another nature, which may perhaps represent our undertaking in a wrong light to you; and this is to evince the justice of it, and of the means designed to accomplish its success.——

'Of this matter you must not pretend to judge by the vulgar rules, obtruded by design upon the ignorance of the world, and which no wise man observes, who has it in his power to break them with impunity. Man is thrown into this world by nature, to obtain his own happiness by every means within his power. This is too sublime a truth for vulgar knowledge, as it would put an end to the delusion, by which the wise few keep the herd of mankind in ignorance and subjection.

'But

'But that it is really the truth, and, as ſuch, made 'the rule of action, by all the ſtates and princes in 'the world, will not be denied, nor even doubted by 'any one, who has conſidered the ſyſtem of policy 'and government which are, and ever have been e-'ſtabliſhed by them.

'For, if it was not an undoubted maxim, that 'power conſtitutes the rule of juſtice, how inconſiſ-'tent would be the actions of all mankind! How 'could a ſtate deviſe laws to puniſh a man with death, 'who goes into his neighbour's field and ſteals his 'ox, and, at the ſame time, ſends armies to invade, 'ſpoil, and depopulate the territories of their neigh-'bours? How could a poor pirate be hanged for 'robbing a ſingle ſhip, and fleets immediately after 'ſent avowedly to deſtroy the whole trade of the ſame 'nation? If a ſtate of war is alleged, that is the 'very impoſition of which I ſpoke. Every man has 'as good a *natural* right to declare war with his 'neighbour, as the ſtate he lives in has with another 'ſtate; and every right that is not natural, is an uſur-'pation, and void. This is the true philoſophy of 'life, ſtripped of the idle dreams of enthuſiaſm, and 'ſelfiſh miſrepreſentations of deſign.

'As for religion, look over the whole race of 'mankind, and try if you can find one who practiſes 'what he profeſſes: this is an inconteſtible proof 'that none believe it; as it is alſo, that there is no 'neceſſity they ſhould, elſe would the want of faith 'and obedience be puniſhed by that power which is 'thought to enjoin them; whereas, on the contrary, 'it is always moſt ſucceſsful, as it affords means 'which thoſe reſtraints forbid. I obſerved, that, in 'the beginning of the converſation on this ſubject, 'you ſeemed ſhocked at my mentioning the neceſſity 'of removing the perſons who oppoſed our deſigns, 'and particularly when I ſaid, the *Spaniard* had 'ſwallowed his death. But this is all prejudice,

'and

'and want of extending your view beyond the surface of things.

'For, how much better is the method we take, of 'striking the single person against whom our design 'is levelled, than that pursued, not only without reproach, but even encouraged by applause, of involving the innocent with the guilty, (innocent I 'mean in respect to us), and laying waste whole nations, to bring a prince to death? How much better would it have been for this court to have removed the King of *Bulgaria* by poison, or a dagger, than to have destroyed millions, as they have 'done, in the pursuit of his death, by this destructive war? This is demonstration! This is conviction 'to him who dares open his eyes to see it! Judge, 'now of *our* undertaking by this invariable system, 'and show me one objection to it.'

This long dissertation was not delivered at one time; it was the substance of many conversations, by which the Jesuit so wrought upon his brother, that he resigned himself wholly to his disposal, and entered sincerely into his designs. The whole objection he made, (and that was not urged against him), was, to being any way concerned in the compendious warfare of the society, the prejudice of education being still so strong with him, that he could not yet abstract things so nicely, as to consider assassination in any other light than as a crime.

I had been in this state of speculation about a week, (for my master never stirred out, as he made sickness his excuse for quitting the service), when his brother, having occasion for some money to send to *Lisbon* on the grand design, the bag, in which I was, was ordered for that service, the brothers having joined their fortunes, as well as their endeavours, in the promotion of it.—I now changed my master again, and set out for *Lisbon*, in the possession of one

of

of the ſociety, who was to deliver us to a particular perſon there.

CHAP. XI.

Chrysal propoſes a political ſcheme, that will never take place, to ſettle the peace of Germany. *A ſhort view of the war between the* French *and* English, *with the motives of the former for tranſferring the ſeat of it into* Germany. *Inſidious ambition meets a juſt diſappointment.*

IN ſo complicated an undertaking, there neceſſarily muſt be a great number of engines at work, and in many different places, upon the regularity and agreement of whoſe motions depends the ſucceſs of the whole. The perſon by whom I was ſent to *Liſbon*, was not to go directly thither, but to take a large circuit, and call at ſeveral places in his way, to ſee that all moved in concert, and every thing was properly prepared for the main action, that precipitancy ſhould not defeat the deſign a ſecond time.

It is not neceſſary to recount all the circumſtances of this tour, which, for the moſt part, were no more than the common occurrences upon ſuch occaſions: I ſhall therefore take notice only of ſuch few, as, for their ſingularity and importance, may deſerve attention. As to the ſecret motive of the journey, (for that alleged was only to inſpect, as uſual, into the private concerns of the order), it has been already ſo well explained, that it is ſufficient to ſay, that every thing exceeded expectation, and gave the ſtrongeſt aſſurance of ſucceſs.

As the war had overſpread all *Germany*, it was impoſſible for my maſter to avoid falling in with ſome of the armies which were then in the field; but this

gave him no concern: he was blessed with one of those ready geniuses, that can put on any appearance so naturally, as to deceive suspicion itself; beside that, he had passports, under one character or another, from every power engaged in the war.

The first event worth remark that occurred to us, (for the nature of war, and its operations in general, have been sufficiently explained before), was in the army of the allies of the King of *Bulgaria*, into which my master entered, in the character of a Jewish agent. This army was composed of the forces of several of the smaller *German* states, (who are hired by the *English*, to defend their own liberties), a small number of *Bulgarians*, and a considerable body of *English* troops.

You are surprised to hear, that people should require to be paid to fight for themselves in so interesting a cause; but so it is, and so it will continue to be, while a number of little sovereigns assume the state, and live in the luxury of the greatest kings; for, as their own revenues are insufficient to support the expence, they will be ready to sell themselves to the first that offers, for an immediate supply, without looking forward to, or regarding the consequences of such inconsiderate, such wretched venality. They have indeed this excuse, which the general depravity of mankind seems to justify their alleging, that, as their ruin would involve greater states in some inconveniencies, they find these will rather submit to this gross imposition, than suffer them to be swallowed up by others, who would grow too powerful by this accretion.

Base as such a prostitution of principle must appear, it has been so successfully practised, (and this not by poorer princes alone; the *Austrians* and *Spaniards* occasionally, and the *Dutch* constantly availing themselves of it), that *England* in particular has been drawn in to bear a part, from which, by her situation,

ſituation, ſhe ſeemed exempt by Heaven, in every war that has diſtracted *Europe* for ſome ages, and put to an expence of blood and treaſure, which is already ſeverely felt, and muſt, if purſued much farther, involve it in the very ruin it thus ſtrives to avert.

There is one, and only one remedy for this; but that is attended with difficulties, which will prevent its being applied, till the evil itſelf ſhall work its own redreſs: a period, that, to human foreſight, ſeems not far diſtant at preſent. This is taking away the power of thoſe petty tyrants, who diſgrace the name of ſovereigns, and uniting their territories into one ſtate, of ſtrength ſufficient to ſupport itſelf. For while thoſe princes have any power left, they will, conſiſtently with their preſent ſyſtems of policy, oppoſe this; but the manner in which they have conducted themſelves, in this preſent war, if not ſpeedily altered, will ſo effectually reduce that power, that they will be no longer able to reſiſt, but muſt paſſively ſubmit to the dominion of whoever will undertake their ſupport: an event as much to be deſired by their own immediate ſubjects, as by the other ſtates, which thus ſuffer by their abſurd iniquitous conduct; as the ſevereſt form of one government, is preferable to the capricious rule of ſeveral tyrants, whoſe poverty and pride put them upon every method of making the moſt of their wretched people, without any regard to the eſtabliſhed rules of juſtice, or even the common rights of humanity. The uſual objection to this expedient, of its overturning the liberty of *Germany*, which they make ſo great a noiſe about, is of no weight; that boaſted liberty being, at preſent, no more than the power of thoſe ſovereigns, to treat their ſubjects as they pleaſe, with impunity, the reſtraining of which within juſt bounds, would really be eſtabliſhing, not overturning the liberty of mankind.

As to the war in which the *Engliſh* were at this time engaged, it was not to be aſcribed ſolely to this cauſe. The inſatiable ambition of the *French*, had prompted them to ſtrive for the enlargement of their territories in *America*, where they already poſſeſſed an hundred times more than they were able to make any uſe of. The poſſeſſions of the *Engliſh* in that part of the globe, were alſo uſeleſsly extenſive: however, the boundaries having been ſettled between them, uſurpations were not to be tolerated, conſiſtently with the honour of the ſtate: beſides, if they were taken no notice of in the beginning, they might in time poſſibly be extended to the profitable and inhabited parts of their dominions. On this account a war was kindled between thoſe powerful and jealous neighbours, the ſeat of which was properly tranſferred by the *Engliſh* to the place in which the attack was made upon them; where the ſuperiority of their naval force gave them ſuch advantages, that they not only recovered the places which had been taken from them, but alſo abſolutely overturned the *French* power in thoſe boundleſs regions, and purſued their conqueſts in every other part of the world where the *French* had made ſettlements, to the utter ruin of their naval power and trade.

As it was impoſſible for the *French* to recover theſe loſſes directly, and the ambition and avarice, which firſt gave occaſion to the war, were now ſtrengthened by pride, to prevent their making the conceſſions on which they might have obtained peace, they removed the ſeat of the war into *Germany*, and attacked certain powers there, with whom *England* was ſo inſeparably connected, that it could not avoid flying to their aſſiſtance, in expectation of having all their own loſſes reſtored, in return for thoſe territories, if they could get poſſeſſion of them, which the number of their own land forces, and the alliances they knew

they

they could make among the venal *Germans*, gave them hope of accomplishing; a scheme not ill-founded, as every motive of honour and justice obliged the *English* to protect and indemnify an innocent people, attacked thus solely on their account. As the *French*, at the same time that they made this attack, had also entered into the confederacy against the king of *Bulgaria*, as has been already mentioned, this necessarily cemented the alliance between him and *England* still closer, and made him join as many of his troops as he could possibly spare, to the army raised by the *English* upon this indispensible occasion, from which conduct he received this immediate advantage, that this army engaged the attention of the *French*, and prevented their joining their forces to the number of his enemies; beside a considerable assistance in money, to enable him to support his own troops.

It was necessary for me to give you this short explanation of the nature of this war, though such digressions are contrary to my design and inclination, that you may be able to form a proper judgment of the extraordinary occurrences I am going to relate to you.

The army through which my master was obliged to pass, as I have said, though paid by *England*, and the flower of it composed of *Britons*, was commanded by a *German* general, in disgraceful acknowledgement of the want of military merit, equal to such a charge, in the natives; though, to palliate the disgrace, and satisfy the jealousy of the *English*, they had the imaginary privilege of being immediately under a commander of their own, and subject only to their own laws in all things, except the operations of the war, when they were of necessity to obey the *German* commander in chief.

Such distinctions create animosities, often more prejudicial than the inconvenience they were meant to

to prevent. Accuſtomed to live in the moſt luxurious plenty and eaſe, and valuing themſelves upon the riches of their country, which ſupported the whole army, the *Engliſh* found fault with the victuals and accommodations provided for them, and treated the *German* troops, with which they were joined, with contempt, who, in return, affected to deſpiſe their delicacy, and took the advantage of their want of knowledge of the language of the country, to give ſuch impreſſions of them, as prevented the people from bringing them in proviſions, with that care and chearfulneſs, which their prompt and generous payment deſerved; by which means they ſuffered the inconveniences of ſcarcity and dearth, while the others abounded.

Though ſuch feuds among the men threatened the moſt dangerous conſequences, thoſe whoſe authority ought to put a ſtop to them, were far from ſtriving to reſtore that harmony, which alone could give ſucceſs to their deſigns. The commander in chief either overlooked as beneath his notice, or was prevented, by his attention to the military operations of the campaign, from taking notice of theſe miſunderſtandings; and the *Engliſh* commander, ambitious probably of the ſupreme command, which he imagined he might eaſily obtain, if he could make the other ſufficiently obnoxious to the *Engliſh*, inflamed them by every artifice he could uſe.

Nor did he ſtop here: whenever he was ſummoned in conſequence of his high ſtation, for he was ſecond in command in the whole army, to attend councils for concerting the operations of the war, he made it his conſtant practice to contradict whatever was propoſed by the commander, and to treat all his ſchemes with contempt, without ever attempting to offer any thing himſelf in their place: and this he did the more effectually, as he was a ready and powerful ſpeaker, and perfectly verſed in the theory of war, whence

the

the commander was a thoughtful, reſerved man, of few words, whoſe whole life had been ſpent in action, and who could more eaſily have executed, than explained his deſigns.

The conſequences of this diſagreement were very detrimental while it laſted, and muſt in the end have proved fatal to the army, had not the *German*, without ever attempting to diſcuſs the affair with his worthy antagoniſt, written directly to the *Britiſh* ſovereign, to inform him that he was ſo conſtantly oppoſed in all his deſigns by the *Engliſh* general, that it was impoſſible for him to do any thing of moment: wherefore he deſired, either that he might have leave to reſign his command, or have his authority freed from this vexatious and dangerous oppoſition; concluding his letter with theſe remarkable words—'Though in a multitude of counſellors there is ſaid to be much ſafety; yet in the operations of war, if many are privy to the councils which direct them, there never can be that ſecrecy, agreement and diſpatch, which are indiſpenſibly neceſſary to ſucceſs.'—

The monarch, who was no ſtranger to the captious and unquiet diſpoſition of the *Engliſh* general, was ſenſible of the juſtice of the *German*'s complaint, and immediately removed the cauſe of it, by giving him an unlimited power to carry on the war as ſhould appear beſt to his own private judgment, without conſulting with, or being liable to be oppoſed by any other perſon.

It may be thought, that the entire removal of the *Engliſh* general, would have been a readier and more effectual method; but the nature of the *Engliſh* government made this not quite ſo proper; as he was deſcended from one of the moſt illuſtrious and powerful families of the kingdom, and a member of the ſenate, in which his talent for ſpeaking gave him ſuch weight, that it was judged beſt, to avoid giving him cauſe for exerting his abilities in oppoſition to

the

the measures of government, by removing him from an employment which he had solicited with all his power and interest; especially as the immense expence of this army began to make the people uneasy, and ready to receive any impression against it. But the event showed that this caution was ineffectual, and productive of greater evils than that which it was made use of to avoid.

Accordingly, from the time the *German* general received this enlargement of his authority, he planned his schemes without ever consulting any person, or ever communicating the least hint of them, till the very moment of their being put in execution, when he sent his orders with the peremptory precision of an absolute sovereign. This was a severe stroke upon the *English* general, who had been accustomed to canvass the very commands of his king, and therefore could badly brook such subordination to a person whom he affected to hold in contempt, for the inferiority of his understanding. However, as it was in vain to dispute, he obeyed in sullen silence, resolving to seize the first opportunity of defeating his measures, since he could no longer disconcert his councils; and to take hold of the least miscarriage, to attack him in the *British* senate, at the end of the campaign, where he doubted not but he should be able to represent things in such a light, as to have him removed from the command, which must of course devolve upon himself.

This account my master received from a Jesuit, the very night he arrived at the camp, who, to ingratiate the society the more effectually with the *French* king, and secure his interest and protection, should any unforeseen accident defeat their design, had entered into the service of the *English* general, as his valet de chambre, for the better opportunity of discovering the schemes of the allies, which he gave constant intelligence of to their enemies.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

A deep-laid ſcheme diſconcerted by an accidental victory. Treachery falls into the pit it had dug for another. The true way to ſatisfy ENGLISH *ſoldiers. The diſgraced commander's motives for appealing from the will of his ſovereign, to a public trial. His hopes are again diſappointed, and he confirms his own ruin.*

THE very morning after my maſter's arrival in the camp, an event happened that aſtoniſhed all *Europe*. The *French* army was ſo greatly ſuperior to that of the allies, that the general was obliged to be entirely upon the defenſive, nor had his conſummate experience, and indefatigable aſſiduity, been able to prevent their taking ſeveral advantages by their numbers, and forcing him to a retreat, that ſeemed to threaten the loſs of the country he was to defend. But, through all theſe difficulties, he perſiſted ſteadily in his own plan, and preſerved his attention cool and ready to take any advantage that might offer.

Accordingly, that morning, upon notice of ſome motions of the enemy, that indicated a deſign of attacking him, he ordered a ſmall, but ſelect body of forces, almoſt all of them *Engliſh*, to advance towards them, and receive their charge, whilſt he ſhould make a proper diſpoſition of the reſt of his army, to give the enemy battle, or make a ſecure retreat, as he ſhould ſee expedient; but the unexampled behaviour of thoſe few brave troops, ſoon changed the face of the affair; for, not content with repelling the attack of the main body of the enemy's army, they intrepidly advanced to charge them, in their turn, which they did with ſuch irreſiſtible valour, that the *French* were thrown into confuſion, and obliged to abandon the field of battle.

I have

I have ſaid before, that the tranſactions in a battle are ſo complicated, and confounded with each other, that it is impoſſible to reduce them into the regularity of a ſatisfactory deſcription; I ſhall therefore enter no farther into the account of this, than juſt as it concerns the conduct of the *Engliſh* general, which I had a ſufficient opportunity of obſerving, my maſter having placed himſelf near his perſon, in company with his friend.

The moment the commander in chief received an account of the unexpected effects of the valour of the troops which he had ordered to march towards the enemy, he ſent to the *Engliſh* general, who commanded all the horſe in that wing, to advance and ſuſtain them. It is impoſſible to deſcribe his ſituation, when a meſſenger from the general informed him, that a part of the army was engaged in the plain that lay before him, and ordered him to march the cavalry under his command to their aſſiſtance. Surpriſe and reſentment, at ſuch a meaſure's being taken, without his having the leaſt previous notice of it, almoſt deprived him of his reaſon; but he recovered himſelf in a moment, and, drawing his ſword, with an air of indignation and diſcontent, was juſt preparing to obey the orders he had received, when another meſſenger arrived, and delivered them, but with ſome variation.

This the general inſtantly perceived, and reſolved to take the advantage of, to juſtify his obeying neither; in hopes, by that means, to accompliſh his ſcheme of defeating the meaſures of his commander, without any regard to the conſequences that muſt attend ſuch a conduct. Accordingly, inſtead of advancing, as he had before prepared to do, he entered into a debate with the meſſengers about this difference in their orders; and finding each poſitive in thoſe he delivered, he coolly determined to go himſelf to the general for an explanation of them; thereby

trifling

trifling away the critical moment; in which manner he expected, that the part of the allied army which was engaged, would be beaten for want of a proper and timely ſupport, when he might have the glory of covering their retreat, and ſaving the whole army from a defeat; and the pleaſure of effectually ruining the character of the general, by attributing the whole misfortune to his not taking the advice of his council, or even communicating his deſigns to them in proper time.

Such a ſcheme was but too likely to ſucceed, had not the unparalleled bravery of the troops, whom he thus deſigned to have ſacrificed to his ambition and reſentment, diſappointed it beyond all human probability, as I have obſerved before, and actually beaten the whole army of the enemy, though ten times their number, out of the field, while he was taking advantage of a pretext, to abandon them to ruin.

The ſituation of his mind, when, upon his coming up to the general, he heard the victory was won, may be better conceived than deſcribed. The cool diſtant reception he met with, gave him notice of the ſtorm which was ready to burſt over his head: and he ſaw that the ſcheme he had laid ſo deeply, to perpetrate the ruin of another, had inevitably worked his own, as the very accuſations which he had intended to bring againſt his general, would now recoil upon him with tenfold force.

According to his fears, the general next morning publicly paſſed an implicit cenſure on his conduct, which he ſaw received with ſuch univerſal approbation, that he thought it proper to reſign his command, for fear of perſonal inſult from the incenſed ſoldiers, and return home, where he did not doubt but the intereſt of his family, and his own eloquence and addreſs, would vindicate his character, at leaſt, if not ſtill accompliſh his deſigns againſt the general.

Though

Though I loſt ſight of him at this time, yet, as I had an opportunity afterwards of coming to the knowledge of this whole affair, I think it better, and leſs troubleſome to us both, to continue the account here, than break my narrative with it in another place.

The firſt conſtruction which was put upon his conduct, was, that it proceeded from cowardice; an opinion, which the cruelty of his temper to thoſe under his command gave no ſmall weight to, from this generally juſt maxim, that *the cruel are always cowards*, and which many inſignificant parts of his former conduct were alleged to confirm: but I have ſhown, that it ſprung from another much leſs juſtifiable cauſe; I ſay leſs juſtifiable, as cowardice is a natural infirmity, which a man is no more accountable for, than for his being born blind or lame; but ſuch a ſcheme as his was a premeditated crime, and aggravated with the blackeſt circumſtances.

The firſt conſequence of his quitting the army, was a perfect harmony between the *Engliſh* and *Germans*, the glory they had acquired upon this occaſion raiſing the ſpirits of the former ſo high, that they thought no more of the inconveniencies they had complained of before, but readily followed the example of their new commander, whom they all loved; and entered into friendſhip with their fellow ſoldiers, as if there had never been any jealouſy between them; who, on the other hand, were ſo ſtruck with their gallant behaviour, and ſo ſenſible of the advantages gained by it, that they no longer accuſed them of improper delicacy, or ſtroze to do them ill offices with the natives of the country, as before. But what completed the happineſs of the *Engliſh*, was the commander in chief's indulging their natural thirſt for glory, under their preſent commander, by giving them the poſt of honour upon all occaſions, and taking public notice of their valour, the honour of which, they eſteemed a ſufficient recompence for the

ſevereſt

severeſt fatigues and dangers: an indulgence which it was not in his power to give before, as their late commander had always oppoſed their being expoſed to danger, out of an affected regard to them, as if they were of greater conſequence than the reſt of the army, or joined it only to make a figure, and not do any ſervice.

As ſoon as the late general arrived in *England*, his ſovereign, who had been informed of the whole affair, immediately deprived him of his many lucrative and honourable employments, and diſmiſſed him his ſervice; an inſtance of clemency which few other princes would have ſhown, and which regard to the merits of his illuſtrious anceſtors alone procured for him.

But ſo far was he from having a proper ſenſe of this lenity, or acquieſcing in the ſentence of his ſovereign, that he loudly aſſerted his being wronged, and demanded a trial, to vindicate his character, with all the aſſurance of conſcious innocence.

This was the higheſt inſult that could be offered to a prince, as it impeached his juſtice, and queſtioned his power in the tendereſt point: however, he ſcorned to take any advantage of it, but, waving every perſonal reſentment, condeſcended to grant the trial demanded; but with this expreſs declaration, that, as it was at the inſtance of the party, and without any legal neceſſity, he ſhould abide by the ſentence of his judges, be what it would, as he would never interfere farther. But this declaration was of little weight; for the general was well adviſed, before he ſolicited the trial, that, according to the laws of the country, he was exempted from the danger of it, by his being deprived of all his military employments, as theſe only made a *Briton* ſubject to military law, by which he muſt be tried; and this exemption was the real reaſon of his being ſo eager for a trial.

But, though his life might be out of danger by this ſubterfuge, the trial completed the ruin of his character, beyond all poſſibility of recovery; as, upon the moſt impartial examination, his neglect of the orders of his commander, and the pernicious conſequences of it, by the loſs of ſo favourable an opportunity of entirely ruining the army of the enemy, and perhaps putting an end to the war by that means, appeared ſo plainly, that the juſtice of his being diſmiſſed the ſervice was not only aſſerted, but he was alſo declared incapable of ever being admitted into it again: and thus he fell a ſecond time a victim to his own ſchemes. As to the victory, which had been the immediate cauſe of his ruin, as ſoon as the circumſtances of it, as related here, came to be known to the world, the general loſt the glory which, in the firſt emotions of joy and admiration, had been ſo laviſhly heaped upon him for it: and it was juſtly aſcribed to accident, as human foreſight could not poſſibly have formed any plan for ſuch an improbable inſtance of bravery as that which obtained it.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL arrives at BRUSSELS. *The great ſource of Jeſuitical influence. Anecdote of a man of pleaſure, and a lady of faſhion. Their hiſtory concluded in character.*

AS ſoon as the confuſion of ſuch an event was a little over, and my maſter thought he could travel in ſafety, he quitted the camp of the conquerors, and, throwing off the character of a Jew, which, as I ſaid, he had borne there, purſued his journey to *Bruſſels* in his own, where he was to receive farther inſtructions: for, though *the great deſign* was carried

on

on by every member of the ſociety, yet the real ſecret of it was known only to a few of the heads, whoſe orders the reſt obeyed with an implicit exactneſs, fidelity, and zeal, never equalled by the ſubjects of any ſovereign upon earth, ſince the days of *the old man of the mountain.*

It was ſome time before theſe inſtructions arrived, which gave me an opportunity of learning the intrigues of that debauched, gaudy, inſignificant court, by my maſter's intimacy with the confeſſor of the governor, who, beſide the advantage of that character to gain information, was himſelf a man of pleaſure, in the moſt extenſive ſenſe of the phraſe, and utterly free from every reſtraint of principle that could oppoſe its gratification; though he had the addreſs to maintain the dignity of his ſtation by his ſecrecy, and regard to propriety of appearance.

There is nothing that contributes ſo much to the influence, which the Jeſuits poſſeſs over the minds of people, as the knowledge of the ſecret hiſtory of their lives. To acquire this, they ſtop at nothing; they aſſume all characters, mix in all companies, and enter into every ſcene of vicious pleaſure, where reſerve is thrown off, and the whole heart appears without diſguiſe. Such an opportunity of information, therefore, was not to be miſſed. Accordingly, the evening after my maſter's arrival, he went with his friend to court, where they had a liberty of placing themſelves in a convenient ſituation to ſee all the company, and make their remarks, without danger of being overheard: ſuch as was merely political, I ſhall omit, as I am ſick of ſuch a ſtupid ſubject, and only take notice of thoſe which may extend your knowledge of the human heart.——'Obſerve that 'little mean looking, ill-formed perſon,' (ſaid the confeſſor, continuing a converſation, the beginning of which I need not repeat) 'who acts as maſter of 'the ceremonies. You ſee his feeble frame is quite

'worn out with debauchery; and he nods over the 'grave, in anticipated old age; yet ſtill he affects an 'air of levity and youth, and ſtrives to inflame o-'thers, by his diſcourſes, to vices, which he is no 'longer able to participate himſelf: but this is all 'grimace, and he aſſumes the appearance of gaiety, 'to hide the gloomy diſcontent and remorſe that prey 'upon his heart.

'There is ſomething ſo particular, in the ſtory of 'this man, that it may be worth while to give you a 'ſhort ſketch of it. He is a native of a neighbouring 'country, where his father, from the loweſt ſtate of 'poverty, amaſſed ſuch wealth in trade, that his 'vanity prompted him to get his family ennobled, 'to hide the meanneſs of his original. There is 'ſomething ſo abſurdly wrong, in purchaſed nobility, 'that it always turns the heads of the purchaſers, 'perhaps in juſt retribution, for ſo flagrant an abuſe 'of an inſtitution, meant as a reward for merit. 'The *ennobled* man lived not to ſhew the truth of 'this obſervation, but his ſons abundantly made up 'for that; the elder laviſhing his wealth on every 'kind of expenſive vanity; and the younger, the 'perſon you ſee, glorying in every kind of debauch-'ery, as if vice and folly were the prerogatives of 'their *honour*.

'In the courſe of a life of pleaſure, he contracted 'an acquaintance with that lady, whom you ſee at 'the upper end of the room. Though nature had ne-'ver meant him for a man of intrigue, and debauch-'ery had exhauſted even the little powers ſhe gave, 'he thought it would have been inconſiſtent with his 'character of a man of pleaſure, not to commence 'an affair of gallantry with ſo deſireable a perſon. 'Accordingly, as ſhe happened to be married, he 'directly cultivated an intimacy with her huſband, 'into whoſe unguarded confidence he ſo far inſinuated 'himſelf, as to receive many acts of friendſhip from

'him.

'him. To a man, who had any ſenſe of honour, 'or honeſty, this would have been an irreſiſtible 'reaſon for deſiſting from his baſe deſign: but he 'was above ſuch vulgar reſtraints, and genteely took 'the opportunity of the huſband's friendſhip, to de-'bauch the virtue of the wife.

'Nothing but the moſt abandoned profligacy in 'the woman, could have given ſucceſs to ſuch an at-'tempt, as the huſband exceeded the paramour in 'every natural endowment of mind and perſon, be-'yond every degree of compariſon: but the caprice 'of vicious inclination is not to be accounted for; 'it will loathe the moſt exquiſite delicacies, and fate 'itſelf on garbage.

'They had not continued their commerce long, 'when their indiſcretion betrayed them. It is im-'poſſible to deſcribe the aſtoniſhment and rage of 'the injured huſband, at the diſcovery! Had it 'been poſſible, he would have doubted his ſenſes, 'which were witneſſes to his diſgrace. In the firſt 'emotions of his rage, he was going to break in up-'on them, and take the revenge, which his ſuperior 'ſtrength amply put in his power: but a mo-'ment's reflection ſhewed him the folly of ſuch an 'action, and determined him to take the ſafer, and 'more ſevere revenge of the law.

'Accordingly he withdrew, without being per-'ceived by them, and bringing ſome of the ſervants 'to teſtify their crimes, as ſoon as he had ſecured 'the proof neceſſary to obtain his ſatisfaction, en-'tered the room in the height of their dalliance, and, 'coolly telling them, that it would be proper for 'them to chooſe another ſcene for their pleaſure be-'ſide his houſe, retired and left them to their medi-'tations.

'This conduct convinced them of his deſign, and 'that they had not a moment to loſe, to avoid ſome 'of the moſt diſagreeable conſequences of it: as ſoon,

'therefore, as they recovered from the firſt impreſ-
'ſions of their aſtoniſhment, they directly departed
'together, and, concealing the place of their retire-
'ment, for fear of a purſuit, quitted the territories
'of the ſtate as ſoon as poſſibly they could.

'But they might have ſpared themſelves that trou-
'ble; the revenge which the huſband ſought, was of
'another nature: he directly inſtituted a ſuit at law
'againſt them, by which, as he had a ſufficient proof
'of their guilt, he obtained a divorce from his wife,
'and ſuch damages from the violator of his bed, as
'made it impoſſible for him ever to return to his
'country, without he deſigned to languiſh out the
'reſt of his days in a priſon.

'The lovers, in the mean time, were far from be-
'ing happy in the uninterrupted enjoyment of each
'other. Variety, and the myſtery of intrigue, were
'all that tempted them to the correſpondence at firſt;
'and now, that theſe were loſt, reflection opened
'their eyes to the conſequences of their folly, and,
'as ſoon as the divorce gave them liberty, they mar-
'ried, to preſerve the appearance of a paſſion they
'never felt, and obtain a ſupport for their families,
'which they could not have expected on any other
'terms.

'When this was done, and that neceſſity removed,
'the averſion which they had long entertained, broke
'out in the moſt violent manner. They lived in a
'ſtate of eternal warfare, in which the wife threw
'off all regard to decency, even ſo far as to take ad-
'vantage of her ſuperior ſtrength, and frequently
'beat her feeble huſband. Obſerve that ſcar on his
'upper lip! the third day of their happy marriage,
'he received that mark of her rage, from the heel
'of her ſlipper, with which ſhe alſo beat out two of
'his teeth, whoſe place he now ſupplies with arti-
'ficial ones.

'But

'But the viciousness of her inclination, which first 'brought him into this wretched situation, released 'him from it sooner than he deserved. They had 'fixed their residence here; where the prince soon 'happened to take a liking to her, the first overture 'of which she eagerly embraced; and compleated 'the infamy of her character, by quitting her se'cond husband, to become his mistress, in which sta'tion you behold her at present.

'Though such a disgrace seemed to be a judicial 'retaliation upon the husband for his own base crime, 'he was insensible of it; and, instead of taking ad'vantage of his deliverance, and retiring to some 'place where his shame was not known, meanly ac'cepted of the employment in which you now see 'him, and submittted to be the slave of her vice and 'insolence.

'But though his hatred for her, and passion for 'the pomp and dissipation of a court, make him 'brave the infamy of such a situation, sickness, the 'constant consequence of debauchery, the faithful 'monitor of guilt, has awakened his conscience to a 'sense of the crime that has sunk him so low, and 'raised a remorse that wastes his life, though he thus 'absurdly strives to drown its voice in the noise of 'vanity and vice.'

CHAP. XIV.

The confessor entertains CHRYSAL's *master with another not uncommon character. The modern method of repairing a broken fortune. The general consequence of female ambition. A curious amour commenced in an odd manner, and carried on in as odd a place.*

MY master was beginning to make some obvious reflections on this account; but his friend soon diverted

diverted his attention to another object: 'Obſerve,' (ſaid he, pointing to a perſon, who bore all the external marks of nobility in his habit and appearance), 'a ſtriking proof of the inſignificance of being born 'to wealth and honours! Who, that ſees that deſ'picable figure which this man makes here, a volun'tary exile from his own country, where his rank 'and fortune placed him in the moſt exalted and ad'vantageous light, can ever throw away a moment's 'thought on heaping up riches, or obtaining honours, 'to perpetuate his name, and aggrandize his family, 'the folly and profuſion of a ſingle member of which 'may thus diſappoint his hopes, and make his very 'virtues an aggravation of his own degeneracy and 'reproach?

'In a rank, ſcarce inferior to that of a ſovereign, 'and poſſeſſed of a fortune ſufficient to ſupport it, 'with dignity to himſelf, and benefit to the commu'nity, did this man enter into life; but a few years 'of the diſſipation of what is falſely called a life of 'pleaſure, diſtreſſed his fortune, and debaſed his 'principles to ſuch a degree, that he was obliged, 'and not aſhamed to have recourſe to the mean me'thod of a mercenary marriage, to retrieve his af'fairs, and enable him to ſupport the external ap'pearance of his character.

'The conſtant conſequences of ſuch marriages, 'might be ſufficient to open the eyes of the unhappy 'victims of them to ſuch a dangerous folly; but 'vanity poſſeſſes ſo abſolute an empire over the female 'heart, that nothing can prevent the gratification 'of it.

'The female whom this perſon pitched upon as 'proper for his purpoſe, by her immenſe wealth, 'was deſtitute of every charm of mind and perſon, to 'attract or preſerve love and eſteem. But few are 'ſenſible of their own deficiencies, or can bear to be 'informed of them. On his making the firſt overture

'to

'to her, all her real friends took the alarm: they 'drew his character in proper colours; they ſhowed 'her, that neceſſity, not inclination, was the motive 'of his addreſſes; and they laid the inevitable conſe-'quences of a connection with ſuch a perſon before 'her in the ſtrongeſt light: but all was in vain. Her 'heart was fixed upon rank and precedence; and, ſo 'ſhe could obtain them, ſhe left the reſt to chance.

'Accordingly, as ſhe was abſolutely her own miſ-'treſs, the match was ſoon made, to the preſent 'ſatisfaction of both parties. He got her fortune, 'to pay his debts, and purſue his pleaſures; and ſhe 'rode in a coach with coronets, and was called *her* '*Grace*.

'But this mutual happineſs did not laſt long: the 'moment he got poſſeſſion of her fortune, all his 'wiſhes were fulfilled; and, as he had nothing far-'ther to expect, he did not thing it neceſſary for him 'to continue any appearance of love, or even com-'plaiſance, for an object really diſagreeable to him. 'Accordingly, the very morning after his marriage, 'he ſet out upon a party of pleaſure with ſome of his 'former companions, and left the bride by herſelf, 'to receive the compliments, and go through the 'farce uſual upon ſuch occaſions.

'Though ſuch behaviour muſt appear baſe and 'ungenerous to the laſt degree, yet ſhe had no right 'to complain of it, as ſhe could not expect any other 'from his known character, and motives for mar-'riage: ſhe therefore put the beſt face on the mat-'ter; and, whether from intoxication at her eleva-'tion, or indifference to him, ſeemed to be inſenſible 'of the ſlight, and went through the ceremony and 'parade with all the appearance of pleaſure and 'content, leaving him to purſue his own inclinations 'without moleſtation or complaint.

'But this calm did not hold long. As ſoon as her 'new dignity loſt the charms of novelty, nature a-

'woke,

'woke, as from a dream, and convinced her, that 'something more than empty ſhow was neceſſary to 'human happineſs: but alas! this conviction came 'too late; and all her expoſtulations were as ineffec-'tual to induce the tenderneſs or eſteem of her huſ-'band, as thoſe of her friends had been with her 'to prevent her marrying him. On the contrary, 'they turned his indifference into averſion, and made 'him treat her with indignity and contempt, inſult-'ing her deformity, and ridiculing the vanity that 'had prompted her to ſacrifice her fortune for a bare 'title.

'Hard as ſuch treatment was to be ſubmitted to, 'ſhe had no redreſs, but was obliged to bear it in 'ſilence, without even the poor conſolation of com-'paſſion to mitigate her ſufferings. At length, a 'farther aggravation of her wrongs gave her the 'pleaſure of revenge, by driving him again into the 'diſtreſſes from which her folly had relieved him.

'In the purſuit of pleaſure, to which he had ſa-'criſiced his character and fortune, he never had the 'excuſe of a refined taſte, or particular paſſion, to 'palliate his folly, but blindly followed the example 'of his companions, or was a ſlave to every groſs 'impulſe of his own caprice, without the leaſt notion 'of delicacy, or even decency, to direct him. As he 'was ſtrolling alone about his own houſe one unhap-'py evening, when he had no company to divert his 'thoughts, he happened, juſt as it grew dark, to o-'verhear two perſons, a male and female, in earneſt 'converſation. Curioſity prompted him to liſten: he 'ſoon perceived that love was the ſubject of their diſ-'courſe, in which the man, whom, by his voice, he 'knew to be one of his huntſman's helpers, was ſo 'ſucceſsful, that he perſuaded the fair one to pro-'miſe him a meeting, half an hour after, in the 'dog-kennel.

'Though

'Though the place of aſſignation might have deterred any perſon, whoſe ſenſes, as well as his inclinations, were not totally debauched, from attempting to ſupplant the happy lover, the novelty of ſuch an adventure made his Lordſhip overlook that, and reſolve to ſupply his dog-boy's place. Accordingly he retired unperceived, and, going into the ſtables, ordered him to be called, and ſent him directly on a meſſage ſome miles off, without giving him an opportunity of letting his miſtreſs know any thing of the matter.

'As ſoon as the time appointed drew near, his Lordſhip went to the agreeable ſcene, where the punctual fair one did not let him wait long. As he was about the dog-boy's ſize, and the place was quite dark, ſhe never perceived the change put upon her, but laviſhed her careſſes upon him with the greateſt tenderneſs, vowing never more to have any correſpondence with the pantry-boy or ſcullion, who, it ſeems, were the dog-boy's formidable rivals, but to be always conſtant to him alone; and took her leave of him, with a promiſe to meet him there at the ſame time next evening.

'Diſguſting, as every circumſtance of this affair ſhould have been, the oddity of it, with the pleaſure of ſupplanting another, even ſo mean a perſon, and in ſo unworthy an object, made him determine to be punctual to her appointment. But then the difficulty was, how to prevent his rival's traverſing his deſign; for his delicacy was not in the leaſt alarmed at the thought of his participating her favours. He was alſo at a loſs to know who the obliging female might be; for the darkneſs that concealed him, was equally favourable to her, and he was a ſtranger to her voice; nor did he care to aſk any queſtions, as that would betray his own impoſture, and bring on an explanation that he did not deſire, both as his greateſt pleaſure was in the

'cheat,

'cheat, and the discovery might be attended with 'circumstances he should choose to avoid, in case the 'female was disagreeable to him.

'To obviate all these inconveniencies, he ordered 'his rival to attend him the very moment he returned, 'when he gave him a letter to carry that instant to 'a gentleman, who lived about twenty miles off, 'with directions to be back early next day with an 'answer. This he said aloud, in the hearing of all 'his servants, that, if his mistress should happen to 'hear of her lover's being sent from home, she might 'also have reason to expect his return time enough to 'keep the appointment: but to prevent this, he had 'desired the person to whom he wrote, to keep the 'messenger, as for an answer of the letter, two or 'three days; in which time, he concluded he himself 'should be tired of his amour.'

CHAP. XV.

Continued. His Lordship's scheme to sling his rival, unluckily disappointed. A disagreeable meeting occasions strange discoveries. Woman never at a loss. Law often spoils sport.

'PLEASED with the sagacity of this scheme, he 'waited for the next evening, with an impatience that he did not often feel on such occasions; 'but an unlucky accident disappointed his designs. 'The gentleman to whom he wrote the letter, happened not to be at home, nor was he expected for 'a day or two; wherefore, as his lord had ordered 'him to make haste back, he left the letter, and returned without any delay, perhaps not more in obedience to his orders, than from his impatience to

'retrieve

'retrieve the diſappointment his deſires had met by 'his abſence the evening before.

'As ſoon as he alighted, therefore, his firſt care 'was to find out his miſtreſs, to tell her the reaſon 'of his diſappointing her the evening before, and to 'make a new aſſignation for that: but, what was their 'mutual ſurpriſe, when they came to compare notes! 'As he inſiſted on his not having attended the ap-'pointment, ſhe flew into a rage, and accuſed him 'of having betrayed her baſely to ſome of his com-'panions; and, as ſhe poſitively aſſerted her having 'met ſome perſon there, he accuſed her, with equal 'warmth, of inconſtancy, and ſacrificing him to ſome 'of his rivals, on whom he vowed the ſevereſt ven-'geance, if he ſhould ever find him out.

'As this altercation was not carried on with much 'delicacy on either ſide, it ſoon produced an abſo-'lute rupture between the lovers, who ſeparated, with 'ſentiments for each other very different from thoſe 'with which they met. The dog-boy, in an hour 'or two, when his reſentment cooled a little, recol-'lected, that it might be proper to let his lord 'know the ſucceſs of his meſſage, who ſent for him 'into his preſence directly; and being freed from 'his apprehenſions, by hearing that he was but that 'moment returned, ordered him to ſet out again 'inſtantly, and deliver the letter to the gentleman 'wherever he was, and not return without an an-'ſwer.

'His orders were ſo urgent, that the fellow did 'not dare to make the leaſt delay; but fortune, that 'ſeemed reſolved to croſs his Lordſhip's deſigns, con-'trived it ſo, that he met the gentleman on his road, 'without having called at home, or received the 'letter that had been left for him. Upon the dog-'boy's informing him of it, he concluded, as he was 'much nearer to his Lordſhip's than to his own houſe, 'that it was the readieſt way for him to wait upon

'him directly, without minding to ſend the man for 'the letter. Accordingly he bade him turn back, 'and ride on before him, to acquaint his Lordſhip of 'his coming.

'Though it was late when he had ſet out the ſe-'cond time, he had made ſuch haſte, that he reached 'home juſt at the time of his Lordſhip's appointment: 'when it unluckily came into his head, that his 'perfidious miſtreſs might poſſibly have taken the 'advantage of his abſence, to make another aſſigna-'tion in his dog-kennel, the firſt thing he did, the 'moment he diſmounted from his horſe, was to go 'there, to ſee if any one had invaded his territories.

'Nor was his ſuſpicion diſappointed; for the fair 'one was ſo uneaſy to unravel the myſtery of the ad-'venture the evening before, that ſhe punctually at-'tended her appointment, where ſhe had not waited 'many minutes, before her unknown lover arrived. 'The ſcene of their meeting was ſo dark, that it was 'impoſſible for either of them to know the other. 'However, ſhe ſoon thought of a method to remedy 'this, which was to purloin ſomething out of his 'pockets, by which ſhe might diſcover who he was, 'without betraying herſelf; for ſhe ſoon found, that 'he knew no more of her, than ſhe did of him.

'She had juſt executed her deſign, and was taking 'her leave of her lover, when his jealous rival came 'upon them unawares, and, overhearing their ex-'preſſions of fondneſs, was ſo enraged, that he re-'ſolved to take immediate revenge. Accordingly, 'he approached them without any noiſe, and, turn-'ing up the but-end of his whip, aimed a ſtroke ſo 'unluckily, though at a venture, that it felled his 'Lordſhip to the ground. The female, who inſtant-'ly gueſſed what was the matter, took advantage of 'the darkneſs to make her eſcape, which ſhe happily 'effected without any diſaſter, the dog-boy ſtumbling

'over

'over his fallen adverſary, the firſt ſtep he advanced
'to purſue her.

'His Lordſhip, half recovered from the blow, laid
'hold of his antagoniſt, who grappling with him di-
'rectly, a battle enſued, in which nobility was ſo
'rudely handled, that his Lordſhip was obliged to
'declare himſelf, and cry out for quarter. It is eaſy
'to conceive the confuſion of the conqueror upon
'this diſcovery: he inſtantly ſtrove to diſengage
'himſelf, and make his eſcape; but his Lordſhip
'held him faſt, promiſing to forgive him though, if
'he would have the diſcretion never to mention a
'ſyllable of the affair, and inform him who the fe-
'male was, with whom he had made the aſſignation
'to meet in this place the evening before.

'Theſe conditions were too eaſy not to be imme-
'diately complied with. He accordingly ſwore eter-
'nal ſecrecy, and readily told his Lordſhip, that the
'girl was no other than the kitchen-maid's daugh-
'ter, who ſerved as a ſcullion wench under her mo-
'ther.

'This diſcovery of his miſtreſs's quality was al-
'moſt as diſagreeable to his Lordſhip, as the effects
'of the dog-boy's jealouſy. However, he ſmother-
'ed his vexation; and, ſtealing ſecretly into the
'houſe, that he might not be ſeen in ſuch a condi-
'tion, retired to his own apartment by himſelf, to
'change his clothes, and waſh off the blood and dirt,
'with which he was all over plentifully daubed.

'As ſoon as he had ſet himſelf ſomewhat to rights,
'he rung for his valet de chambre, who was his uſual
'agent upon ſuch occaſions, and ordered him to
'bring the kitchen-maid's daughter up to him. The
'valet, who was ſufficiently acquainted with the ca-
'priciouſneſs of his maſter's taſte, was not in the
'leaſt ſurpriſed at his choice of ſuch an object, but
'obeyed him directly.

'The fortunate female, who had found out the 'quality of her new lover by his snuff-box, which she 'had picked out of his pocket, was almost afraid to 'obey the glad summons, for fear she might be sus- 'pected of having designedly occasioned the outrage 'his Lordship had lately met: however, her ambition 'getting the better of her fear, she suffered herself to 'be prevailed on, and went trembling and blushing, 'in all the bashfulness of virgin innocence, to know 'his Lordship's commands.

'If he had been surprised at the discovery of her 'condition, he was much more agreeably so at the 'sight of her; for, though she was far from being 'handsome, there was something in her face, which, 'from her extreme youth, and a glow of health, that 'her confusion heightened not a little, struck his fan- 'cy in an uncommon manner. He, therefore, with- 'out giving her the least hint of what had happened, 'as he imagined she knew nothing of him, made no 'ceremony of proposing love to her. But young as 'she was, she had too much woman in her soul to 'comply so easily, though there was nothing she de- 'sired more ardently. Accordingly, she refused his 'Lordship with the most respectful modesty; and, on 'his urging his request farther, threw herself at his 'feet, in a flood of tears, and begged him to have 'compassion on her friendless youth and innocence.

'Such behaviour would have made him doubt the 'dog-boy's information, did not the sound of her 'voice convince him she was the person. He, there- 'fore laughed at her artifice, and told her, that, as 'soon as the farce was ended, he should expect an- 'other answer, as he knew she had granted to others 'the favour he asked of her.

'This convinced her that he had discovered her, 'and that it was necessary for her to enlarge her 'scheme, to accomplish the design she had formed, 'of establishing a lasting interest in his affections.

'Accordingly,

'Accordingly, upon his saying this, she embraced his knees, in a seeming agony of distress, and, conjuring him to have mercy on her folly, owned that she had transgressed with one, and one only, who had made such an impression upon her heart, that, though she had taken him for another, and knew not even who he was, she had made a vow never to repeat her folly with any other.

'The candour of this confession, the greatest part of which he thought he knew to be true, completed her conquest over him. He raised her from the ground, and, embracing her tenderly, discovered himself to her. The consequence is obvious. She immediately appeared in public as his mistress, and had the address to accommodate herself so entirely to his caprices, that she soon gained the absolute mastery of his heart. As for the poor dog-boy, he was turned off of course, as an offence to her sight, though not without a considerable gratuity, to purchase his silence; but that was impossible: the moment he left the house, he looked upon himself as freed from the necessity of concealing it any longer, and made it the common subject of his discourse, till it became as publicly known as his Lordship's name.

'This happened just as his affairs became again so distressed, that he was forced to withhold the support he had allowed his wife. She therefore directly took the advantage of it, to sue him for a separate maintenance, on the plea of his thus living in avowed adultery. The fact was too flagrant to be denied; and his infatuation was such, that he would not remove the cause, to avoid the consequence of the suit, but chose to quit his native country, and come here with his mistress, to live in the disesteem and contempt you see him treated with, on the poor pittance of his fortune which the law allows him for his support; the rest, much the

'greater part of it, being assigned for the maintenance of his wife, and payment of his debts.'

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL'*s master meets an old acquaintance, who relates the history of his life. Curious anecdotes of a* GREAT *man.*

MY master's friend proceeded to give him an account of several other persons who were present; but, as his remarks were confined to their political characters, I shall omit them, as I said before. On these I have dwelt so long, because they display a just, however a disagreeable picture, of human nature.

The day after my master's being with his friend at court, he went to see an old acquaintance of his. The principles of the soul are sometimes so strong, as to baffle hypocrisy, and mark the character of the man, in the lineaments of his visage, to every common eye. The first view of my master's old friend and acquaintance struck me with horror; every vice that can deform the human soul appeared triumphant, and unallayed with any the least tincture of virtue in his face. Though I was no stranger to the latitude of my master's principles, the intimacy of such a person blackened my worst opinion of him. They flew to each other's arms, and, embracing with the tenderness of long-parted friends, asked each other a thousand questions almost in a breath, concerning their mutual welfare, and the adventures they had met with since they had seen each other.

In the account given by my master, there were none but common occurrences; but the history of his friend had something so strikingly singular in it, that,

for

for the curiosity of such a character, I'll give you a short sketch of it, as drawn by himself, with this difference only, that I shall omit several facts, too gross for repetition, and soften the colouring of the whole, as the glaringness of it would overpower human sight, and strike imagination with horror too strong to bear.

'You have often expressed a curiosity, my friend, (said the stranger to my master) to learn the particulars of my life. That I did not gratify it, was not owing to any diffidence or disinclination to oblige you, but because I had not arrived at any fixed period to make a proper pause at; and therefore, an imperfect account could give you but little satisfaction. But that objection is now removed: I am here settled in a situation, which, though far below my former hopes, I shall strive to be contented in, and not launch out any more into the fatigues and perils of the world, at this late season of my life. One caution only, I must hint to you, which is, that in the account I am going to give, I shall throw aside all prejudice, and represent every thing in the unadorned simplicity of its first principles, without any regard to the received notions of self-deluded man.——

'I was born in *France*, of poor parents, who were scarce able to give me the first rudiments of a liberal education. To avoid a life of labour, I rashly entered into the monastic, before I had experience enough to see the folly of such a step: but my stay here was not long: to a man of sense, the obligation of a vow ceases with the motive that induced him to take it. I made my escape from the convent: and, as I was destitute of money to support me, and as yet too ignorant of the ways of the world, to be able to live without it, was driven by necessity, to enlist myself for a soldier. But I soon found that I had not gained by the change,

'the

'the slavery of a soldier's life being still more intolerable than that of a monk. I therefore had recourse 'to my former expedient for relief, and deserted, the very first opportunity. I then threw myself at random 'upon the world, without any particular point to direct my course to; but this did not discourage me: 'I had boldly thrown off the shackles which foolish man has forged for himself, to prevent his rising in 'life, and regulated my conduct solely by my convenience. This gave me a superiority over the rest 'of mankind, which I never failed to avail myself of. 'I looked upon their follies as my inheritance, and 'soon found abundant opportunities of turning them 'to my advantage.

'For some years, I lived a life of ramble, in the 'course of which, I met with many adventures.——— 'At length, I thought my own country too narrow a sphere to confine my activity to, and so I 'went to *Spain*, where I expected an ample harvest, 'from the ignorance and superstition of the people; 'but their poverty disappointed my hopes, and almost starved me into repentance of my expedition. 'However, I proceeded to *Madrid*, where the credulity of a countryman of my own, made me amends for the reserve of the natives. He not only 'relieved my immediate wants, which were too pressing to be borne, but also entrusted into my hands 'some valuable materials for a literary work, from 'which he expected both reputation and profit. But 'I disappointed his hopes; for being tired of *Spain*, 'I took the first opportunity of going to try my fortune in some other country, and carried all his papers with me. Nor was this all he suffered by his 'confidence. I had before experienced the inconvenience of depending upon charity, in a country 'where there is scarce sufficient for the necessities of 'nature. I therefore thought it proper to take all 'the money and valuable effects in his possession, to

'defray

'defray the expences of my journey. As to the diſtreſs this might throw him into, I never regarded 'that a moment, no more than I did his being my 'countryman. I deſpiſed the narrowneſs of thought, 'that made ſuch accidental circumſtances of any 'weight, when they claſhed with my own particular 'deſigns; and I eſteemed the leſſon I had taught him, 'to be more cautious whom he placed his confidence 'in, a ſufficient recompence for his loſs.——

'From *Spain* I directed my courſe to *Germany*, 'where the political knowledge I acquired from my 'late friend's papers, made me ſo much taken notice 'of, that, after ſome time not diſagreeably ſpent a-'mong the great, I was recommended to the prime 'miniſter and favourite of the king of *Poland*, as a 'proper perſon to be entruſted with the education of 'his only ſon. Not to diſgrace this character, I aſ-'ſumed a fictitious name and title, and gave out, that 'I had been obliged to leave my own country for an 'affair of honour. My employment gave me fre-'quent opportunities of converſing with the father of 'my pupil, to whom I diſplayed my ſkill in politics, 'to ſuch advantage, that I was ſoon admitted into 'his eſteem and confidence. In this intercourſe I 'had the honour of ſtarting the firſt hint of that pro-'ject, which has ſince kindled the preſent war in *Ger-'many*, and will immortalize his name (for he has 'had the ungenerous meanneſs to aſſume it to him-'ſelf) to all ages.

'Such a ſituation was ſufficient to ſatisfy the de-'ſires of any other man; but my ambition knew no 'bounds: I thought my patron did not reward my 'merit as it deſerved; and in revenge, I reſolved to 'work his ruin. For this purpoſe, I entered into a 'correſpondence with ſeveral noblemen, who were 'his enemies, and, taking advantage of the op-'portunities his confidence gave me, of ſeeing his pa-'pers, copied ſome, and counterfeited others, that

'I thought

'I thought neceſſary to my deſign, which was no 'leſs than to raiſe a civil war, in which the miniſter 'ſhould be ſacrificed, and his maſter dethroned. But 'juſt as my plot was ripe for execution, it was diſ-'covered, and I hurried from a palace to a priſon, 'where I was condemned to languiſh out the reſt of 'my days; my life being ſpared in compliance with 'a fooliſh delicacy of my patron's, who thought it 'ſhould be a diſgrace to him, to have his ſon's tutor 'hanged.

'When I had lain here ſome time, an happy 'thought procured me my liberty. I wrote a moſt 'penitential letter to the Pope's nuncio, in which I 'diſcovered my true name, and my having fled from 'my vows; and, pretending a thorough ſenſe of my 'guilt, and deſire of returning to my order, begged 'his interceſſion in my favour. My ſcheme ſucceed-'ed; he claimed me as an eccleſiaſtic, and the king, 'whoſe mind was too intent on greater matters to think 'of me, readily complied. I was accordingly releaſ-'ed from my priſon; but inſtead of being ſet abſo-'lutely at liberty, as I had hoped, was ſent under a 'guard of eccleſiaſtics to *Rome*, where all the favour I 'could obtain, was to be ordered back to my convent.

'This was a great diſappointment to me: but I 'was obliged to ſubmit. I accordingly ſet out, 'guarded as before, but determined to take the firſt 'opportunity of making my eſcape; which I at 'length effected, after many vain attempts.

'To fruſtrate the purſuit of my guards, I fled into '*Switzerland*, where the name of liberty flattered my 'hopes of doing whatever I pleaſed. The firſt thing 'I did there, was to abjure my religion, and profeſs 'theirs, to conciliate their good opinion. This was 'no difficulty upon me, as I had long looked upon 'all religions with equal indifference. As I had no 'money, I immediately commenced author. But 'though I gained reputation, my profits were ſo in-

'conſiderable,

'considerable, that I was obliged to have recourse to 'other methods for my support, some of which hap- 'pening to contradict their prejudices, I was obliged 'to leave their dominions with circumstances of dis- 'grace. You will laugh at the narrow notions of 'mankind, when I tell you, that the affair they made 'so great a noise about, was only my denying a 'debt I was unable to pay, and the creditor did not 'even want.

'There were some other particulars indeed of my 'conduct, which would have met with a severe fate, 'had I not taken prudent care to obviate it. I had 'entered into an intimacy with a person of some for- 'tune, who had an agreeable wife. The connections 'of the wife are always made with a view to some 'particular end. I had more than one in this ac- 'quaintance; the supply of my necessities, by the 'generosity of the husband, and the gratification of 'my pleasure, by the enjoyment of the wife.—I suc- 'ceeded in both; but was prevented by an accident 'from enjoying my success long. The husband sur- 'prised us one day, in a situation that did not admit 'of doubt. He drew his sword, to have revenged 'his wrongs with my death; but I disappointed his 'design, by presenting a pistol at his head, which I 'always carried about me for fear of accidents. Up- 'on this he ran out of the house in a kind of frenzy. 'I saw the delicacy of my situation, and that my 'safety depended upon a proper use of that moment. 'The wife had swooned away at the first sight of her 'husband. I ran and fetched a glass of water, as if 'to recover her, but conveyed a few drops into it, 'which I never went without, for any such emergency, 'that delivered her for ever from all fear of her hus- 'band's resentment. I had many reasons for doing 'this. It was in her power to make discoveries to 'her husband which I did not choose; beside, as 'the suspicion of her death would inevitably fall

'upon

'upon him, I thought that a good way to escape his 'revenge. I then quitted the house, without being 'perceived. All things happened as I could wish. 'The husband was obliged to fly from his country, to avoid an ignominious death, for the murder of his wife; and all his effects were confiscated to the state. It is true, I did not entirely escape suspicion. He had laid open all he knew 'of the affair, by letter to his friends; but though 'they believed him, he had no evidence to support 'his charge, so that I despised his impotent accusations.

'From *Switzerland* I once more turned my face 'to *Germany*, where my name was so famous for my 'political knowledge, that a war being just ready to 'break out, I received considerable offers from most 'of the parties concerned, to engage me in their 'service; but though I refused none, I resolved not 'to engage myself absolutely to any, till I could 'know which might prove most advantageous to me.'

CHAP. XVII.

Continued. He comes to ENGLAND, *where his services are rejected by the state; and he is obliged to exert his abilities in a lower sphere. He gains the confidence of his landlord, from whom he borrows all he is worth, and then strives to pay the debt with an halter. A good retreat is better than a bad stand.*

'AS *England* was likely to bear a considerable part 'in the war, I thought it proper to go over and 'sound the inclinations of the ministry there also. The 'riches and credulity of the inhabitants of that country have long made it be esteemed the inheritance of 'needy adventurers. The thought of displaying my

'abilities

'abilities, in so fertile a soil, inspired me with an ar-
'dour I had never felt before. I already grasped all
'the wealth of the nation, and looked upon myself
'as the oracle of the people, and the terror of the
'ministry, who would not fail to purchase my silence
'with a pension, that should enable me to spend the
'rest of my days, wherever I liked, with dignity and
'ease.

'Full of these flattering hopes, I arrived in *Lon-*
'*don*, where I soon found, that, just as the notion I
'had formed of the people in general might be,
'the government would not take the bait I had pre-
'pared for them, and treated me and my proposals
'with equal contempt. This threw me into the ne-
'cessity of prostituting the abilities, which I fondly
'hoped would have been employed in embroiling na-
'tions, to the deception of individuals, for the sup-
'port of life: for all the wealth I was master of,
'consisted solely in the projects of my brain.

'My success in this underplot made me some a-
'mends for the miscarriage of the other. I no
'sooner fixed my habitation, than I was crowded to
'by tradesmen of all kinds, to solicit my custom for
'things, which I had not the least probability of be-
'ing ever able to pay for. But that gave me no con-
'cern; I accepted their offers, to such an amount,
'that I was immediately able to procure considerable
'sums of money, for other occasions, by the sale of
'commodities, which, so far from having occasion
'for, I scarcely knew the use of.

'Flushed with this good fortune, I threw off all
'reserve, and gave a loose to every passion which
'luxury could raise in a temper naturally warm;
'never reflecting that the day would soon come,
'when my inability to pay my present debts, would
'not only put a stop to these artificial resources, but
'also probably plunge me into the horrors of a gaol,
'for life. I professed myself a man of pleasure; I

'dreſſed, gamed, and intrigued, with people of the 'firſt rank; and for ſome time was ſo intoxicated, as 'to forget my firſt purpoſe in coming over, and 'think I could ſupport this life for ever. Not that I 'was ever ſo intent upon my pleaſures, as to miſs any 'opportunity of procuring the means immediately 'neceſſary to obtain them. On the contrary, the 'moment I threw off my deſigns upon the govern-'ment, I doubled my application, to turn the follies 'of particulars to my own advantage, ſtopping at 'nothing, however iniquitous in the opinion of the 'world, to accompliſh my deſigns.

'Such a life muſt neceſſarily involve me in a va-'riety of adventures, many of which, it is true, I 'got not ſo ſmoothly over as I could wiſh; but I 'had learned philoſophy enough to take the bad with 'the good, without repining at what it was not in 'my power to redreſs.

'It would be endleſs to enter into a particular de-'tail of every thing I did and ſuffered in the courſe 'of this life; I ſhall, therefore, only juſt mention 'one or two affairs, which may ſerve to give you ſome 'notion of the reſt.

'As I particularly valued myſelf upon my literary 'character, there was no kind of acquaintance I was 'fonder of cultivating, than with men of letters; for 'which I had alſo a farther motive, that as their at-'tention to books, generally made them ſtrangers to 'the ways of men, they were moſt eaſily to be made 'the property of any mercenary deſigns.

'On both theſe accounts, I had taken lodgings 'in the houſe of a clergyman, who, beſide the cha-'racter of a man of learning, was alſo reputed to be 'in eaſy circumſtances. I ſoon found that he was a 'perſon exactly fitted for my deſigns, and therefore 'loſt no time in making a proper impreſſion on him. 'The firſt ſtep towards acquiring confidence, is to 'place it yourſelf. I immediately made him my bank-

'er,

'er, lodging every ſum of money I won at play,
'or raiſed by the means I mentioned before, in his
'hands. As my ſucceſs made theſe ſums very conſi-
'derable at firſt, he conceived an opinion of my
'being a perſon of conſequence and fortune, above
'my appearance. This inſpired him with ſuch re-
'ſpect for me, that if, at any time, I even hinted an
'occaſion for more than I had in his hands, he not
'only offered to ſupply me, but even looked upon my
'acceptance, as an honour. To confirm him in this
'way of thinking, I frequently accepted of his offers,
'when I had no occaſion, only that the punctuality
'of my payment might make him ſtill the readier,
'whenever I ſhould.

'Nor was it long before I was obliged to avail
'myſelf of this ſcheme. A bad run at play ſtripped
'me of all my money, and my tradeſmen brought in
'their bills, ſo that my former reſources were at an
'end. In this difficulty, I applied to my landlord,
'who readily ſupplied me with all the money in his
'poſſeſſion; and that not being ſufficient, borrowed
'as much more as he could, till my remittances ſhould
'arrive from my eſtate.

'This ſupply might have extricated me from the
'difficulties of the preſent moment. But I was a-
'woke from my golden dreams, and ſaw that this
'was the laſt money I could any ways expect to raiſe,
'as my practices began to be ſuſpected, and every
'body had taken the alarm againſt me; ſo that if I
'parted with it, I ſhould only gain a momentary re-
'lief, as my landlord would ſoon expect to be paid
'alſo. I therefore reſolved to ſerve all my creditors
'alike, and go back to *Germany* with the money in
'my poſſeſſion, leaving them to curſe their credulity,
'and be more cautious for the future.

'As I had ſtill a conſiderable quantity of valuable
'effects in my poſſeſſion, I knew it would be impoſſible
'to remove them without giving the alarm to my

'landord; and I could not think of leaving them in 'his hands, though they were far short of the debt I 'owed him. In this dilemma, my ready genius 'prompted a scheme, that would not only secure me 'from him, but also gain me time to prepare for my 'decampment, with more convenience. Upon my 'first coming to his house, I had contrived, by taking 'the impressions in wax, to get false keys to all his 'locks. This is a piece of precaution, which no man 'of prudence will ever neglect. In pursuance of my 'scheme, the morning after I had received the money 'from him, and before I was to pay it away, by ap-'pointment, I took the opportunity while he was at 'church, to convey into his closet several things of 'value, my property, which I could clearly prove, 'taking away, at the same time, the obligations which 'I had given him for the money he had lent me, which 'his confidence in my honour had prevented his tak-'ing the precaution of having witnesses to.

'As soon as I had done this, I went directly to a 'magistrate, before whom I made oath, of my being 'robbed of a large sum of money, and many of my 'most valuable effects, among which I particularly 'named the things I had left in his closet, and requir-'ed an authority to apprehend my landlord, and 'search his house, as I had reason to suspect that he 'had stolen them, having caught him several times 'coming out of my apartments, in evident confusion, 'and at times when my being absent deprived him of 'every honest reason of going into them; and this 'charge, I had confirmed by the testimony of my 'valet de chambre, and another person, whom I had 'prepared properly.

'Though the execution of sentence is not quite 'so sudden in *England* as in *Turkey*, an accusation of 'this kind, however groundless, is in many respects 'not much less dreadful; the harpies of the law, 'never loosing their hold, till they have devoured

'every

'every thing in his poſſeſſion. The warrant I demand-
'ed was readily granted, for this reaſon; and away
'I reſolutely went, in company with the officers to
'execute it. We found my landlord, in the ſecurity
'of innocence, in his parlour, waiting for my coming
'in to dinner. It is impoſſible to expreſs his aſtoniſh-
'ment, when they laid hold of him, like a thief, and told
'him it was upon my accuſation. All the reſolution
'and preſence of mind I was maſter of, were requiſite
'to bear me through the ſcene! At firſt he was un-
'able to ſpeak a word; which the candour of his ac-
'cuſers did not fail to conſtrue as a ſilent acknowledg-
'ment of his guilt; but, recovering himſelf for a few
'moments, he firſt raiſed his eyes to heaven, and
'then turning them upon me, gave me a look that
'almoſt froze the blood in my veins; but never deign-
'ed to ſpeak a word to me.

'He then addreſſed himſelf to the officers, and
'mildly deſired, that they would execute their duty
'with lenity, nor offer any indignity to the ſacred
'character he bore, till a proof of his guilt ſhould
'make him appear unworthy of the ſanction of it.

'Such behaviour had an effect, not to be deſcribed,
'upon all that were preſent. The very officers for-
'got their hardened nature for a moment; and the
'tear of pity fell from eyes, that never wept before at
'human miſery. Even I began to feel the fooliſh in-
'fection, and was obliged to charm up other paſſions
'to prevent my betraying myſelf, though my ruin
'was at ſtake. Accordingly, I raiſed my voice,
'and with a ſtern accent, commanded the officers to do
'their duty, and ſearch the houſe before his accom-
'plices ſhould have time to convey away the things
'we came in queſt of. This word put an end to a
'compaſſion, that was contrary to their nature, and
'they proceeded to their buſineſs, with their uſual
'keenneſs, though ſtill with reſpect, till they came
'to ſearch his cloſet, where the ſight of the things

'which I had ſworn to have been ſtolen from me, 'appeared ſo plain a proof of his guilt, that they 'treated him with all the indignity of the vileſt 'malefactor.

'Secure in his innocence, he had hitherto preſerv-'ed a ſteadineſs of temper, that ſeemed ſuperior to 'the power of fortune; but at this ſight, his reſolu-'tion failed him. He fell upon his knees, and raiſing 'his hands and eyes to Heaven; "Juſt God (ſaid he) 'thy will be done! thou knoweſt my innocence, and 'art able to defend me!——and wilt defend me!" '(ſaid he) riſing, and recovering his former ſpirits.

'In the mean time, I ſeemed encouraged by this 'ſucceſs, to hope for the recovery of the money, 'which I pretended to have loſt alſo, and ceaſed not 'to urge the officers to make the ſtricteſt ſearch. 'But this was not neceſſary; they ranſacked every 'place, and toſſed about every thing that was too 'large for them to convey away, till they made his 'whole houſe one ſcene of deſolation. They then 'dragged him before the magiſtrate, where the find-'ing of the things gave ſuch weight to the charge, 'which I poſitively ſwore againſt him, that he was 'on the verge of being hurried to priſon, and would 'certainly have ſuffered an ignominious death, had it 'not been for ſome unlucky prevarication in my 'valet de chambre's evidence. This, with ſome ſuſ-'picions that were ſuggeſted againſt my own cha-'racter, by the pawn-broker to whom I had ſold the 'goods I took up from my tradeſmen, and who un-'fortunately happened to be preſent, gave the affair 'ſuch a turn in his favour, that he was admitted to 'bail, till his innocence or guilt ſhould be proved by 'a public trial.

'But it was far from my intention to wait for this. 'The moment I left the magiſtrate, I went to the 'houſe of an acquaintance, whither I had ordered 'my effects to be removed before, where I reſolved

'to

'to prepare for my departure with the utmoſt ex-
'pedition. As to my creditors, when they called
'upon me the next morning, as I had appointed, for
'their money, I told them the ſtory of my having
'been robbed the day before by my landlord; and
'therefore, that they muſt wait till I ſhould receive
'another remittance from my own country; and,
'though I ſaw that few of them believed me, or were
'inclined to grant me that indulgence, I was under no
'concern, as the habitation of my friend was in a
'place privileged from the immediate power of the law.

'However, it was impoſſible to be eaſy in ſuch a
'ſituation, where every eye that ſaw me, reproach-
'ed me with what I had done. I therefore took
'the firſt opportunity of going off, in which I was
'ſo ſucceſsful, as to elude the vigilance of my pur-
'ſuers, and eſcape to *Holland*; where I had the vex-
'ation to learn, that half of my ſcheme was diſap-
'pointed, my landlord being diſcharged without
'trial, for want of my appearing to proſecute him:
'but, though he eſcaped death, his affairs were ſo
'effectually ruined by the loſs of the money he lent,
'and had procured for me, and the expence and
'damage he ſuffered by my accuſation, that he was
'obliged to fly for refuge to the ſavages in *America*,
'from the power of his more ſavage creditors."

CHAP. XVIII.

Continued. He launches again into the troubled ocean of politics, and ſuffers a ſecond ſhipwreck in ENGLAND. He that will not when he may, *&c.*—— *It is often better to play a poor game, than ſtand out.* CHRYSAL *arrives at* LISBON.

'NO ſooner arrived in *Holland*, the general ren-
'dezvous of politicians, than I reaſſumed that
'character

'character once more, and that with such success, 'that the minister of a power in alliance with *England*, conceived such an opinion of my abilities, as 'made him offer to recommend me to that court, for 'an employment of the highest consequence, in one 'of the principal courts of *Germany*.

'Though I was sensible, that my return to *England* must be attended with disagreeable, if not 'dangerous circumstances, from the general preju-'dices that were entertained there against me, I 'boldly resolved to accept of his offer; the former, 'which could consist only in impotent marks of dis-'like, I disregarded; and the latter, I judged my 'recommendation would enable me to defeat. Ac-'cordingly, I set out with the utmost privacy, and 'was safe in *London*, before my leaving *Holland* was 'even suspected by those who would have lain in wait 'for me.

'The very morning after my arrival, I waited 'upon the minister to whom I was recommended 'with my letters, who received me very politely, 'and, upon the credit of the character given to him 'of me, entered into a familiar conversation on seve-'ral subjects of intricacy and importance, in which 'I supported the character he had received of me so 'well, that he dismissed me, with an assurance of his 'protection and favour.

'I now thought myself secure of my hopes; but 'the pleasure of this thought was of a very short con-'tinuance. The very next morning, I received a 'message from the minister, to attend him directly, 'which you may think I obeyed in the highest spirits. 'Instead of the affability with which I expected to be 'received, upon my advancing to him, he darted a 'look at me, that seemed designed to search my ve-'ry soul. After viewing me steadily thus for some 'moments, 'You are recommended to me (said he) 'as a man of abilities; and such I have found you to

'be;

'be: but you have impoſed upon the perſon who 'recommended you, and concealed your real charac-'ter from him, or he would never have entertained 'ſo favourable an opinion of ſuch an abandoned 'wretch.—But I have unravelled the myſtery of 'your iniquities, and am guarded againſt your wiles. '——Your crimes call aloud for vengeance, and the 'ſtroke of fate hangs over your head; but, in hopes 'you may repent, and amend your life, and in reſpect 'to the recommendation you brought, (of which I 'cannot give a ſtronger teſtimony than this), I will 'give you an opportunity to eſcape, for this time, the 'ruin that threatens you. Fly this country directly! 'If you are found in this city an hour hence, or 'make the leaſt delay in any part of the kingdom, '(and all your ſteps are watched), you are to expect 'no favour or protection. And, that you ſhould not 'plead inability to obey this injunction, take this 'purſe of gold, and let me never ſee your face more.'

'I need not tell you the effect this ſpeech had up-'on me. I took the purſe and retired, without 'making any reply; nor did I cloſe my eyes in 'ſleep, till I had bid adieu to that inhoſpitable ſhore.

'On my return, I went to wait upon my former 'patron, but was denied admiſſion, and ordered never 'to go there any more; the account of my diſgrace 'in *England* having, as I learned afterwards, been 'tranſmitted to him in the very ſhip that brought 'me over.

'Though theſe miſcarriages mortified my pride, 'they did not deject my ſpirit. The gold given me 'by the *Engliſh* miniſter, enabled me to ſupport 'myſelf, in a ſtate of independence, for ſome time; 'during which, I ſucceſſively offered to accept every 'propoſal that I had formerly rejected; but I had 'miſſed my opportunity, and was now rejected myſelf 'in my turn. At length, when I was almoſt reduced 'to deſpair, the employment I hold here was offered 'to me, which, though far beneath my former hopes,

'I thought

'I thought it not prudent to refuse; especially as it 'opened to me an opportunity of venting my rage 'with impunity upon all who had ever offended me. 'I am literally hired to wage open war with truth, 'honour, and justice, by inventing false news, to 'support the exhausted spirits of the people;—by 'defaming the enemies of my employers, to give a 'colour to the iniquitous designs of the latter; and, 'by varnishing over the most flagrant acts of oppres-'sion, cruelty, and deceit, with the specious colours 'of authority, justice, and religion.

'To a man who retained any of the prejudices of 'the world, and did not examine things in the sim-'plicity of nature, such a task must be most disagree-'able. But to me, all things are indifferent, as I 'know all things are alike.'

Here my master's friend concluded his history; the enormity of which would prevent its obtaining credit, had it been related by any body but himself, though, as I have told you before, I have omitted the blackest particulars, and softened the colours of the rest.

In a few days after this interview, my master left *Brussels*, and proceeded on his journey to *Lisbon*, during the remainder of which, nothing occurred worth relating.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *comes, at* LISBON, *into the possession of a former acquaintance. His master makes the great attempt without success. Several of the nobility are sacrificed to other motives, on pretence of being guilty of this fact.* CHRYSAL'*s master is at length taken up; and he changes his service.*

IF I was formerly surprised at meeting a *Peruvian* acquaintance at *Vienna*, I was no less so, when I found,

found, that the perſon to whom he ſent me in *Liſbon*, was the very captain, of whoſe miraculous converſion, after the rape and murder of his brother's wife, I gave you an account in the beginning of this relation, whom I found to be the man choſen for *the great attempt*, the proof which he had given of his capacity in that affair, having raiſed their opinion of him ſo high, as to make them think him the only proper perſon for this.

I did not remain long in a ſtate of ſpeculation in the poſſeſſion of this maſter; the orders which were brought along with me, were all that was waited for, to accelerate the execution of the deſign. Accordingly the blow was ſtruck a few nights after, but, in the confuſion inſeparable from ſuch attempts, without effect.

The King was ſhot in his coach, as he returned one night from a love aſſignation, at ſome diſtance from his palace, by my maſter, who had way-laid him at a proper place, and fired a blunderbuſs, loaded with ſmall balls, at him, through the back of the coach.

By an inſtantaneous ſtupefaction of fear, which is often taken for reſolution and preſence of mind, the King fell down in the coach, and ſpoke not a word, which made my maſter conclude the work done, and ſo prevented a repetition of the blow.

But what was his confuſion the next morning, when he found, that the King, though ſeverely wounded, was likely to recover. The opportunity was loſt, nor was it probable that another ſhould offer, till it would be too late. However, he attended the event ſo far ſafe, that no one could endanger his ſafety by betraying him, there being no perſon there, not even of the order, privy to the action; for ſecrets of this importance, are always entruſted to as few as poſſible.

While

While he thus calmly looked on, as an unconcerned ſpectator, it is impoſſible to deſcribe the diſtraction that reigned all over the city; where every perſon ſuſpected his neighbour, and was almoſt afraid to converſe with his brother, for fear of being ſuſpected of a participation in a crime, of which he knew not the perſon guilty.

At court, in the mean time, the moſt myſterious ſilence was obſerved, and all converſation on the ſubject diſcouraged. This was thought to be the moſt probable way of coming to the knowledge of ſo dark an affair, as their ſpies could thereby mix with the people with leſs ſuſpicion, and make their obſervations with the greater certainty, when they ſhould be off their guard.

Not that they were at a loſs to think from whence the blow had come; but by whom it was ſtruck, was the difficulty to find out, that ſo they might found their proceedings on an evidence of juſtice; for the Jeſuits were too mighty a body to be attacked upon an uncertainty.

The reaſon for ſuſpecting them of this fact, was, that, upon the miſcarriage of their premature attempt in *America*, the King was ſo incenſed againſt the whole ſociety, that he diſmiſſed them from the direction of his conſcience, and every other place and employment about his perſon or court.

Such an indignity, he was ſenſible, muſt alarm the reſentment of a ſet of men, not remarkable for patience, or forgiving affronts: he had therefore taken every precaution to guard againſt them, as far as human prudence could direct his fears, which was only againſt diſturbance in the ſtate; for of ſuch an attempt as this, he could not ſuſpect them.

While things hung in this ſuſpenſe, I had an opportunity of ſeeing into the character of the people I was among; but human language wants force to deſcribe them.

I have

I have already given you the genuine character of the *Dutch*; to that let us add poverty, pride, superstition, bigotry, and its inseparable attendant, cruelty, and they will give you some idea of the present *Portugueze*. A people, of whom it is hard to say, whether to abstracted speculation they are more ridiculous or execrable, the struggle between their follies and vices is so unremitted, and so strong.

A little before I arrived there, the city had been reduced to ashes by lightning; and, before they had recovered from the consternation which such a misfortune threw them into, they received an account of the capital of their *American* dominions being swallowed up by an earthquake.

Such signal instances of the wrath of Heaven might have been expected to alarm their consciences to look for the causes of it in their vices, and to try to avert it by repentance and amendment. But instead of that, the first proof they gave of coming to their reason (or I should rather say of coming to themselves, for reason it was not) after their fright, was, to attribute these misfortunes to a relaxation in superstitious severity, and to demand, as victims to it, the only people under heaven, whose good-nature had given effectual relief to their distress.

At length, after a calm so long, that people began to think the storm was quite allayed, it broke out with a fury, that amazed not only the unhappy heads on which it burst, but also the whole nation beside.

I told you that the attempt had been made upon the king, as he was returning from a love meeting. The person with whom he had been, was descended from the first, and related or allied to all the greatest families in his kingdom.

In a country, whose characteristics are pride and revenge, such an intercourse must be dangerous even to royalty, as the honour of all those families seemed to be wounded through her. Accordingly, a rumour

of her being with child, having extorted some inadvertent, illusive, general menaces from some of her relations, as the fact was really so, the conscious apprehensions of the king were alarmed; and as he could not declare the true reason of them, he made a pretence of the assassination; the charge of which received some appearance of probability, from the very circumstance which now occasioned its being brought against them, it being known that he was returning from that lady, at the very time when the attempt was made upon him.

Thus to the fear of danger, arising from a real crime, were the greatest subjects in the kingdom to be sacrificed on a pretence of guilt, which their very accusers believed them innocent of. For before they were apprehended, their ruin was resolved on, which was not a little forwarded by the opportunity which it gave the king of seizing all their vast possessions, and thereby repairing the losses which he had suffered in the late calamities.

Accordingly, after suffering every torture which human ingenuity could invent, to make them confess a guilt of which they were not even suspected; they were publicly executed in the most ignominious and cruel manner, in the sight of an astonished people, without any proof being given of their guilt, beside the bare affirmations, and strained inferences of those, who were both accusers and judges, and also reaped the profits of their ruin.

Such scenes as this are too horrid to be dwelt on: I shall, therefore, return to my master, with whom I had an opportunity of coming to the knowledge of every transaction relative to this mysterious affair; the miscarriage of his attempt, having made it necessary for him to disburse the money, among which I came to him, and by that means continued me so long in his possession.

Could

Could any thing have heightened the opinion my firſt knowledge of him gave me, it muſt have been, to ſee him, an unconcerned ſpectator of the ſufferings of thoſe unhappy victims to his guilt, and to hear him argue for the juſtice of their puniſhment.

But his triumph was not long; ſecret and inſcrutable as the Jeſuits imagined they had laid their ſchemes, the king either received, or pretended to have received, ſuch information of them, as, confirmed by a multitude of facts not to be denied, gave an appearance of probability and juſtice, to their being charged as accomplices with the unhappy nobles, and treated with the utmoſt ſeverity. A ſtep that could not have been taken on ſuch grounds, while theſe nobles were alive and at liberty, or the people in ſpirits to exert the influence of their prejudice in their behalf. But the favourable minute was come to ſtrike at the root of eccleſiaſtical tyranny, and deliver both king and people from a yoke under which they had ſo long blindly groaned, that at length they thought it juſt and natural.

Accordingly, in the midſt of his ſecurity, my maſter was ſeized, and hurried away to a priſon with the reſt of his brethren; and all his papers and effects ſecured for the government. Of the former, they could make but little uſe, as it is an invariable rule with all the *order*, never to keep any by them, whoſe diſcovery may endanger them, or their deſigns; but the latter were turned to ready account.

In this diſſipation I fell to the lot of one of the officers, who, in his ſearch, took an opportunity to ſecrete the bag in which I was, and that very night lodged his acquiſition with a banker, for fear of detection.

CHAP. XX.

CHRYSAL *meets another acquaintance at his new master's. Conclusion of the history of honest* AMINADAB. *Adventures of his son. He enters into business at* LISBON, *in which* CHRYSAL *suffers a great misfortune. His ingratitude to his uncle justly rewarded.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new service.*

I WAS scarce settled in the possession of my new master, whom I found to be a concealed Jew, when I saw a person enter his compting-house, the sight of whom made me almost distrust my senses. Nor was the surprise of my master less: 'O, God of 'Abraham (said he) is not that the son of my brother 'Aminadab! Where hast thou been? And where is 'thy father? He has been sought from *Dan to Beer-'sheba!* His spoiling that Gentile, that *Egyptian* 'woman, has been a joy to all the brethren! But I 'am amazed to see thee here; I hope he is safe out 'of the reach of every Christian power.'

'O brother of my father, (replied the son of *Aminadab*) mention not that unhappy affair, if thou 'hast not a mind to kill thy wretched nephew with 'grief. My father is dead!'—'But where is the 'wealth, nephew, (interrupted my master hastily) 'where is the wealth?'—'All lost! all buried with 'him in the bottom of the ocean,' (replied the ne-'phew).'—'*All lost! The wealth all lost! O my bro-'ther! O Aminadab, my brother! my brother! Since 'the destruction of Jerusalem there fell not such a mis-'fortune on our tribe. The wealth all lost! O Amina-'dab, my brother! my brother!*'—'Alas, my father, I 'faint through weariness, weakness, and hunger; 'I have not eaten bread this day; let us retire into

'the

'the inner chamber, and when my ſoul is refreſhed 'with a morſel of bread, and a drop of water, I 'will put aſhes on my head, and ungird my loins, 'and then unfold the whole unhappy ſtory to thee.'

The repaſt was literally what he had aſked; and as ſoon as it was ended, and the young *Aminadab* and his uncle ſeated on the floor together, in the poſture of mourning, the former proceeded thus:

'By the letters which my father wrote to thee from '*England*, in the ſacred cypher of our family, thou 'wert informed of his intended return into his na- 'tive land of *Africa*, and invited to meet him at *Te- 'tuan*, and ſhare his fortune. This he told me while 'we were upon our voyage; but thy better angel pre- 'vented thee, and ſaved thee the labour and loſs of 'ſuch a journey in vain.

'The ſhip, on board which we unfortunately em- 'barked, was a *Dutchman*, bound for the coaſt of *Ita- 'ly*, but was to land us at *Gibraltar*, from whence 'we knew we could get an immediate paſſage over. 'But, behold, when we were juſt in view of the port, 'when the ſight of his native land made the very ſoul 'of my father rejoice, and we thought of nothing 'but ſafety and content, a *Sallee* rover gave chace to 'our ſhip. The *Dutch* captain immediately crouded 'all the ſail he could to eſcape; but the wind dying 'away, and the pirate gaining upon us with his oars, 'he came to my father with tears in his eyes, and 'told him that we were all ruined, for he had ne- 'glected to bring a paſs.

'This news was like a clap of thunder to my fa- 'ther, who too well knew the conſequence of their 'finding ſuch a maſs of wealth in his poſſeſſion.— 'Wretch that I am! (exclaimed he) why did I venture 'with one of thy ſordid nation? ſlaves to MAMMON, 'who would hazard liberty and fortune to ſave ſuch 'a trifle.'—Then turning about, and going into his 'cabin, he ſtood ſome moments as if loſt in thought,

when bursting into an ecstatic rage, he snatched up the coffer in which his gold and jewels were, from under the head of his bed, and embracing it eagerly, 'I have gained thee, (said he) I have earned thee with anxiety and toil; and I will not lose thee now!—O Jonas! send thy whale to receive me, and bear me to the land of my fathers: I will not be a laughing-stock to the Gentiles, nor a by-word in my father's house.'—Saying which words he rushed upon the deck, and before any person could possibly prevent him, he plunged into the sea, with the coffer in his arms, and was never seen more.

'While all stood amazed at his rashness, the heavens, as if appeased with this sacrifice, immediately sent a wind that filled our fluttering sails, and so bore the ship, delivered thus of its *Jonas*, out of the reach of the enemies. You may better conceive than I can describe, the situation I was in at this event: I prostrated myself on the shore where we landed at *Gibraltar*, and bewailed my misfortune with tears and lamentations. But this afforded no relief to my distress; and something I must do to earn a morsel of bread. I therefore sold all my superfluous raiment for four ducats, for all our money was in the coffer, and with these did I purchase some eggs and fruit, which I sold again in the garrison, to support my life, till I should have an opportunity of coming to thee, my father, for advice and assistance in this distress; and now behold these four ducats are become twelve ducats in my hands, and that is all my wordly wealth.'

The uncle covered his face with his hands, and remained silent some time. At length he spoke to his nephew in these words: 'It is in vain, O son of my brother, to mourn for what is not to be remedied; holy *David* wept no longer for his child after he was dead: let us therefore arise, and think of something that may, if not retrieve the mighty loss, at

least

'least administer relief to thy distress. Thou hast 'been initiated in the mysterious art of lessening the 'weight, without effacing the image, on the golden 'coins of these idolaters. This was the first rise of 'thy father, who began the world as poor as thou 'art now, till his unwearied industry, in this prac'tice raised him from want. Follow thou therefore 'his example; and may the God of thy fathers give 'thee the same success, but with an happier blessing 'than he found.

'And lo! fortunately it has happened, that I have 'this very hour received a large quantity of the coin 'of *Britain*, all new from the mint. On that there'fore thou mayest begin thine endeavours, and the 'fourth part of the produce of this labour shall be 'thine. I was just going to have sent for another, 'who always works for me for a fifth: but I am 'willing to give thee a profit extraordinary, to en'courage thee.

'Thine earnings in this business will soon produce 'thee a considerable sum, with which thou mayest 'go privately to *London*, and purchase old clothes, 'which will bring great profit in *Germany*, as soon 'as this war shall be at an end.

'Till then art able to provide for thyself, thou 'mayest eat bread here, and sleep under the shadow 'of my roof. Be not dejected: *honest* industry never 'fails of success.'

The young *Aminadab* was no sooner introduced thus into a way of *honest* industry, than he seemed to forget his loss, and settled himself most intently to work. I fell one of the first sacrifices to his art, which deprived me of a fourth part of my weight, and of all my beauty; nor did my companions fare much better; so that, from a thousand of us, who were in the bag, his share of the spoil was a treasure, on which he immediately commenced merchant, stocking a box with all the gaudy trinkets which could allure

allure the ignorant, and give him an opportunity of exerting his talents of impoſition.

You have often heard me mention the beauty of my figure with pleaſure: but, alas, vain boaſt! it was now no more! I came from this fiery trial, with all the marks of age and deformity ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear comparing myſelf and my companions to a number of *Britiſh* ſoldiers, juſt come from *Soup Maigre* and ſtraw, in a *French* priſon.—In this mutilated condition I was made up in a parcel; to be ſent to *England*, againſt whom this trade was moſtly carried on, there being no other nation who would receive their own coin, under the diſgrace of ſuch diminiſhing. But before I could be ſent off, an accident happened in the family of my maſter, the banker, which gave me a longer ſtay in *Liſbon*.

I have told you, that, in ſecret, he was a Jew, though the proſpect of gain made him profeſs Chriſtianity, in deſpight of the horrors of the inquiſition. But happy had it been for him that he had not made ſuch profeſſion, or that his nephew had been drowned with his father.

For no ſooner had his gains, in his art of diminiſhing, reſtored him a little to his ſpirits, than, thinking his portion of that profit too little, and inſufficient beſide, to raiſe him to opulence ſo ſuddenly as he deſired, he caſt about how to acquire the whole, or at leaſt a large part of his uncle's wealth at once.

He therefore took a proper place to work in, for his merchandize did not interrupt him in his main buſineſs, at ſome diſtance from his uncle's houſe; and having conveyed a large ſum of money thither to work upon, he directly informed the *holy office* of his uncle's *Judaiſm*, with directions how to detect him in it; concluding, that, when he ſhould be ſeized, there would be no inquiry made after the money that was in his own hands, as he knew it was impoſſible he ſhould ever eſcape from thence. And

though.

though this was but a poor pittance, in compariſon of the ſums which he knew would be forfeited, yet he comforted himſelf with the thought, that it was more than he could any other way hope to obtain from him.

But he was deceived by his avarice, and juſtly involved in the ruin which he drew upon his benefactor. For, when the officers of the inquiſition took poſſeſſion of his uncle's effects, finding an entry in his books of the money in *his* hands, they went directly in queſt of it, and that ſo unexpectedly, that they caught him at *his work*, beyond a poſſibility of evaſion or eſcape.

This is a crime never forgiven in any ſtate. He was therefore immediately delivered up to the civil power, from which he received a death, not leſs cruel than that of his uncle, from the inquiſition.

Of all the human ſufferings I yet had ſeen, except in the caſe of the *ſacrificers*, this gave me the greateſt pleaſure, as there is no crime that can deform the heart of man more than ingratitude.

I here changed my ſervice of courſe, and entered into that of the *holy office*, to the judge of which, I was delivered the day I was taken out of the poſſeſſion of the unfortunate Jew.——I have before given you my ſentiments, on the abſurdity of thinking to pleaſe the Deity, by cruelty to his creatures, in the inſtance of the *human paſſover* of the Jews. The ſame arguments will hold here, and with this additional force, that cruelty of every kind is, if poſſible, more abſurd under the Chriſtian diſpenſation than any other, as, beſide the general laws of nature and reaſon, the particular laws of Chriſtianity do every where clearly and expreſsly command brotherly love, tenderneſs, and compaſſion, forbidding every appearance of cruelty, under the ſevereſt denunciations of wrath.

But there has been ſo much, and that ſo well ſaid,

on

on this subject already, and the nature of the sufferings of those unhappy wretches, who are brought before this tribunal, are so well known, that I shall spare myself the pain of the repetition, and only mention one affair, the circumstances of which appeared singularly affecting to me.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon criminal appears at the tribunal of the holy office. A love-scene in a strange place. The history of PHERON *and* ISSA.

THE next day after I came into the possession of the inquisitor, there appeared at his tribunal a person of the most august presence, though overcast with all the melancholy which his unhappy situation could inspire. He seemed to be advanced in years, but not past the vigour of life, and was distinguished from the national look of the *Portugueze*, by an uncommon turn of feature, which showed him of another people.

As soon as he was brought to the place appointed for him, the inquisitor, with an awful solemnity in his voice and manner, addressed him thus, 'Thou 'art once more brought to this tribunal, to try if 'the stubbornness of thine heart has yet relented, 'and thou wilt confess thy guilt.'—'I told thee be-'fore, O judge of the faith of Christians, (replied 'the prisoner, with a composed look and determined 'voice); I told thee before, and I repeat it again, 'that I am not conscious of any thing that should in-'cur the censure of this tribunal: nor shall all the 'tortures which the inventive cruelty of man can in-'flict upon this wretched body, make me lie against 'mine immortal soul, or acknowledge guilt to which

'I am

'I am a ſtranger. But tell me of what I am accuſed, 'and my conſcience ſhall direct my lips to anſwer 'thee the truth. Perhaps I may unwittingly have 'erred; thou knoweſt that I have not always pro-'feſſed the Chriſtian faith according to the laws 'eſtabliſhed here: pardon then the errors of mine 'ignorance, and inſtruct me to avoid the like for the 'future. And, O! I adjure thee by thy Chriſtian 'faith, to relieve my heart from the anxiety that 'tears it, for the fate of my daughter! O, let me 'know'——

His adjuration was broken off at theſe words by the officers of the court; and his anſwer not being ſatisfactory, he was remanded back to priſon, without any farther queſtions, with the ſtrongeſt menaces of ſeverity; though, in ſecret, the judge ordered him to be treated with tenderneſs and reſpect, and ſupplied with every comfort and convenience of life, that could mitigate the horrors of a priſon.

My maſter then withdrew, and, changing his judicial robes for a more convenient and ſplendid dreſs, retired to his own apartments, where, after the reſpectful ceremony of ſending to deſire admiſſion, he went into a particular chamber, in which was a young female, whom he approached with all the timid tenderneſs of love: 'I have ſeen thy father, my deareſt '*Iliſſa*, (ſaid he), and he is well; nor ſhall any hu-'man means be wanting to preſerve him ſo.'

'Why then may I not ſee him? (replied the lady); 'how can I truſt thy words? thou haſt already de-'ceived me.'—'Thou knoweſt, my love, (returned 'he), that thy requeſt is impoſſible; and if I have 'deceived thee, by promiſing compliance with it, it 'was only to calm the tranſports of thy paſſion, that, 'in a cooler moment, thou mightſt hearken to the 'voice of love and happineſs.'—'Mention not happi-'neſs to me in this place. Can happineſs be without 'liberty? Is a priſon the proper ſcene for love? But

'I will

'I will be deceived no longer! I will see my father, 'or I will not live. Grant me this request, and ex-'pect my gratitude. Thou knowest, that for myself 'I fear not thy power; thou knowest, that immediate 'death is ever in my reach: trifle not therefore with 'me any longer; restore me to my father; restore 'us both to liberty; and then, then only, speak to 'me of love.'—'Thou hast conquered, my *Iliffa*! 'thou hast conquered! Your father shall be restored 'to you; and we will all fly together to thy native 'land, where we shall live in happiness: but this 'cannot be compassed on a sudden; it will require 'both time and address to secure our retreat. But 'when I have done this for my *Iliffa*, can I be sure 'of her love? Will her heart return the sacrifice I 'make?'—'I have told thee, that my heart is grate-'ful; I tell thee now, it is not insensible to softer 'passions: urge me no farther: when I am freed from 'this prison, and my father is present, to give the 'sanction of his authority to my actions, I promise 'thee to become thy wife: and my inclination, 'which has never yet contradicted my duty, will not 'find it difficult to pay the love I promise at the altar.'

These words raised my master's heart into an ecstasy; he prostrated himself at her feet; he kissed her hand, and swore eternal love.

The rest of the day was spent in forming schemes for their escape, and planning scenes of future happiness; in the prospect of which, their unequal years seemed to raise no cloud. The lady appeared to be about eighteen; her beauty, though very great, was rather majestic than soft: different from the Bohemian lady I mentioned before, an air of grandeur kept every one around her at an awful distance, and the flash of her eye, like lightning, terrified the heart it warmed. Her lover was just past his meridian, but still in all the vigour of life, and far from disagreeable in his appearance or conversation.

There

There was something so extraordinary in this affair, that it raised my strongest curiosity to know the circumstances of it; nor was I long at a loss. In the happiness of his heart, that evening, my master presented a jewel of immense value to the lady, from whom, in the way of gallantry, he asked a tablet, cased with gold, as a return.

The lady refused not his request; but, at giving it, desired he would be careful of it, as she esteemed it much beyond its apparent value, it having been given her by her father.

The moment I heard her say this, and saw him put the tablet in his pocket, I knew my curiosity would be gratified by the *Spirit of the golden case*. As soon, therefore, as my master retired to rest, I entered directly into his heart, and summoning, by our sympathetic impulse, the spirit I wanted, I *showed* him my curiosity, which he complied with, by *a look* which signified these words:—'There is something 'so extraordinary in the whole history of the persons 'who have raised your curiosity, that it will be 'necessary to trace it from the beginning, to give you 'the satisfaction you desire.

'The father of the young lady, who gave me to 'our master, is the person whom you saw this morn'ing at his tribunal. His name, in his own country, 'was *Pheron*; he is a native of *Abyssinia*, where his 'ancestors have possessed ample territories for many 'ages, being descended from the race of their kings.

'From the first dawn of reason in the mind of *Pher'on*, he shewed the strongest desire for knowledge, and 'the steadiest attachment to virtue. The advances 'of human knowledge have not been so great in those 'countries as here; yet natural reason has been able 'to discover the sublime truths of morality; the prac'tice of which is called wisdom, and the time, con'sumed here in fruitless speculation, devoted to it; 'by which means, if men are not so knowing, they 'are certainly more wise.—In this happy employment

'passed the first years of the youth of *Pheron*, till 'riper manhood calling him to the service of his coun- 'try, he went, at the head of his father's vassals, to 'repel the invasions of the *Ethiopians*.

'His success was so great in this first essay of his 'arms, that he not only repelled the invaders, but 'also carried the war into their own country, where, 'after many victories, he compelled them to sue for 'peace.

'The fame of his actions soon reached the ears of 'his sovereign, who sent for him to his court, and 'rewarded his services, by giving him his sister in 'marriage. Dignities in those countries are not 'prostituted to the support of luxury and idleness. '*Pheron* returned home with his bride, to govern and 'protect his people, who, safe in his care, pursued 'their usual occupations; war not being made there 'a constant profession, nor the gratification of the 'worst passions of human nature reduced into a sci- 'ence, and practised by rule.

'The peace which *Pheron* had made, was not in- 'jurious to his enemies, and therefore was preserved 'by them, which gave him leisure to attend to the 'improvement of his country, and instruction of his 'people.

'He had lived in this happy state some years, when 'there arrived a person in his country, who gave an 'unexpected turn to his affairs. The situation of 'those nations is such, that the inhabitants themselves 'rarely ever travel; nor is the face of a stranger seen 'in an age among them. This made the arrival of 'this man the more taken notice of: he was im- 'mediately introduced to *Pheron*, to whose friendship, 'his knowledge in several branches of science, soon 'recommended him.

'When the stranger had thus established an interest 'with him, he at length disclosed to him the motive 'of his coming into a country so remote from his own:

'he

"he told him, that he had undertaken this hazardous "and painful journey, in pure obedience to the divine "command, of inſtructing the ignorant in the know-"ledge of ſalvation. He *explained* to him the *myſteries* "of the Chriſtian religion, the *hierarchy* of *Rome*, "the divine foundation of its power, and the ſeveral "orders in its government, in ſo forcible a manner, "that he ſoon made a convert of him.

"*Pheron had always adored the name of Chriſt, but "never till now knew what it was to be a Chriſtian.* "One only book of his goſpel had he ever ſeen; and "from that he could underſtand no more, than that "*faith in the death of Chriſt for the redemption of mankind, "and obedience to the ſelf-evident laws of morality, with "the pious worſhip of the one* GOD *alone, was the whole "religion taught by him.*—It is not ſtrange, therefore, "if the glorious fabric of the church, as repreſented "by this Jeſuit, for ſuch he was, had all the effect "he could deſire upon him; the naturally inquiſitive "turn of his mind, making him liſten with eagerneſs "to every thing which ſeemed to open a new proſpect "to it.——Nor was he content with knowing himſelf "thoſe ſublime doctrines: he alſo inſtructed his wife, "whom he tenderly loved, and their example convert-"ed the greateſt part of his people; for nothing could "prevail upon him to attempt forcing their aſſent. "——But this did not ſatisfy him; the deſcriptions "which he had heard of the learning, piety, and glo-"ry of *Rome*, had filled his ſoul with an ardent deſire "to ſee that metropolis of the world, that he might "learn its virtues, and tranſplant them into his own "country. He communicated this thought to his in-"ſtructor, who, fired with the glory of ſuch a proſe-"lyte, encouraged him in it, by every argument he "could uſe.——This determined his reſolution to "make an attempt, the hazards of which would be "rewarded with ſuch happy conſequences. He there-"fore prepared all things for his journey, in which

'his wife would bear him company, and also bring 'her only child, the lady whom you saw to-day, to re-'ceive the benediction of his *Holineſs*; and, committing 'the government of his people to his brother, and 'taking jewels and gold, to an immenſe value, to de-'fray the expences of his journey, he ſet out with a 'company ſufficient to protect him from the dangers 'of travelling through ſuch inhoſpitable countries, 'and arrived without any accident at the *Red Sea*, 'where he embarked on board a ſhip for *Alexandria*.

'While he waited here for a ſhip bound to *Italy*, 'the plague deprived him of his inſtructor and his 'wife. He was at firſt inconſolable for his loſs; but 'virtue ſoon awoke reaſon to his guard; and his 'care for his daughter made him careful for himſelf. '—His attendants would have perſuaded him to re-'turn directly home, as he had loſt his guide; but 'the loſs of his wife made the thought of home a 'torture to him. He therefore ſent them back, and 'reſolved to ſettle his daughter in a convent, and en-'ter into the monaſtic life himſelf at *Rome*.

'With this deſign he embarked in the firſt ſhip that 'ſailed for *Europe*, not being able to bear the ſight of 'a place which had been ſo fatal to him. The ſhip 'was bound to this place, but, for a large ſum of mo-'ney, the commander engaged to land him at *Leghorn*; 'but happening to come to the knowledge of his wealth 'on his paſſage, he brought him directly hither, where 'he was no ſooner landed, than he informed the in-'quiſitor, who is his brother, who immediately ſeiz-'ed both *Pheron* and his daughter, *for errors in their* 'opinions, and confined them in the priſons of the 'holy office, where they have now been above a year.

'The firſt motive of this outrage was the ſtranger's 'wealth, an unpardonable crime in that court; and 'which would ſoon have brought them to an unhappy 'death. But the beauty of the daughter has hitherto

'deferred

'deferred their fate, and, by what you have overheard 'to-day, may probably prevent it entirely.'

CHAP. XXII.

The love adventure continued. The inquisitor visits PHERON, *and obtains his consent. He employs an* ENGLISH *sailor, whom he sets at liberty, to assist him in his designs.*

THE inquisitor's heart was too full of love, to let him sleep long; he arose about midnight, and, taking the keys of the prison, which were every night deposited with him, he went directly to visit the father of *Iliffa*.

He found him wrapped in so profound a sleep, that his approach did not awake him; a sight so unusual in those mansions of despair astonished him; he paused a moment in admiration, gazing at him, to try if he could trace that virtue in his face, which made his heart superior to such terrors.

Just then a smile of indignation flashed over the face of *Pheron*; and, in the illusion of imagination, he cried out, 'It is in vain! my conscience is secure, 'and I despise your tortures.'——As he said these words, the working of his mind awoke him, when, seeing my master standing at the side of his bed, the scene seemed to him, in his surprise, to be continued, and he proceeded thus:—'I have told thee, that thy 'tortures should not bend my soul to falsehood; and 'now thou shalt find it so.'

'O father of *Iliffa*, (returned my master, melted 'into tenderness at such a sight) I come not to give 'thee torture! I bring the balm of comfort to thy 'soul.'—'Art not thou the inquisitor?'—'I am, O 'Pheron, and thy friend.'—'Am I awake? Is this, or

'was the former, but a dream? Guard me, good heaven! let me not fall from virtue!'——'Such virtue 'ever is the care of Heaven!—*Pheron*, behold thy 'friend, the proſelyte of thy virtues.—The time admits not many words; I come to offer thee liberty, 'and concert with thee the methods for our obtaining happineſs. Thy *Iliſſa*'—'Heaven guard my 'child!'—'Thy *Iliſſa* is well, and happy in her father's welfare!'——'O my child! my child! but 'ſhall I ever ſee her again?'——'You ſhall, ſhe 'ſhall be reſtored to your boſom, and never turn 'from it more.'—'Good, gracious Judge! O, when? 'O, how?—my child! my child!'—'Suppreſs your 'joy a moment; the beauties of *Iliſſa* have triumphed over the malice of her fate! She has found a lover, who offers happineſs to her and you.'—'Does 'my child love him? Is he an honeſt man?'——'His 'life will prove him ſuch; he offers to reſtore you 'and your *Iliſſa* to liberty, and to accompany you 'both to your native country, for there can be no 'ſafety in *Europe* for you, after you leave this place; 'your eſcape from whence, and every circumſtance 'relating to your return, ſhall be his care. Nor will 'he demand the reward his heart pants for, till your 'ſafety ſhall remove every fear, every doubt of his 'ſincerity.'

'O name the generous man!'—'*Behold* him at your 'feet! receive me for your ſon.'—'Thee! the inquiſitor! who threatened me with torture!'—'But treated thee with tenderneſs, treated *Iliſſa* with reſpect.' —Make me know that.'—'I aſk no favour, but on 'that condition. If I procure liberty for you and 'your *Iliſſa*; if I reſtore you to your native land, and 'accompany you thither; if your *Iliſſa* acknowledges 'the ſervices of my love, and aſks your conſent to 'reward them, will you confirm my bliſs, and own 'me for your ſon?'—'I will, and thank kind Heaven that gives me ſuch a ſon.'

Saying

Saying this, he embraced my master, who in a few words let him know the scheme he had formed for their escape, and then left him to his happy reflections, while he went to prosecute it.

In one of the cells of the inquisition, there was confined an English seaman, who had been seized, and secretly conveyed thither, for some disrespectful expressions against the *Divinity of St. Dominic.*

The manly, modest resolution, with which he had refused to own the authority of their tribunal, and his firmness under the first tortures, marked him out to the inquisitor, as the person proper for his design; for he would not trust any one of his own country, not even his brother, whose treachery to *Pheron* he now abhorred.

As soon as he opened the door of his cell, the sailor, whose soreness prevented his sleeping very sound, perceived him, and imagining it was a summons to a repetition of the torture, he sprung up as far as his chains would admit him, and cried, 'Hollo! who 'comes there?'—The inquisitor advancing, answered, 'A friend.'—'Aye! damn all such friends, (replied 'the sailor) I suppose you are come to give me another toasting; but if my hands were out of the bilboes, I'd send you off with a salt eel for your supper.'

'Moderate your rage a moment, my friend; I 'come to set you free, if you desire, and will deserve it.'—'Avast haling, brother! I do not understand you.'—'Why, do not you desire to be free?' '—Desire! aye! that I do! but I may whistle for that 'wind long enough, before it will blow.'—'Perhaps 'not; perhaps that wind, as you say, is nearer blowing than you imagine: what would you do to be 'free?—'Do! I'd burn the inquisition, and cut the 'inquisitor's throat! I'd do any thing, but turn papist, 'or fight against *Old England.*'—'Honest *Briton!* 'But suppose I should set you free; would you serve 'me faithfully in one thing, that is neither against

'your

'your country, nor your religion?'—Belay that, and 'I'll warrant you, if I say it, I'll do it without more 'words. I'm no landsman nor Portuguese.'—'Well 'then, I'll take your word, and so come with me.'—The sailor was so surprised, he scarce knew whether he was asleep or awake: however, as soon as the inquisitor had unlocked his chains, he shrugged his shoulders, and followed him without more questions.

When they were come into my master's apartment, he made the sailor sit down, and giving him some wine to cheer his spirits, 'You are now at liberty, 'my friend, (said he) without any farther condition, 'and may go where you please: but if you will serve 'me in an affair I shall mention to you, you shall 'have reason to think of this night with pleasure as 'long as you live.'—'Serve you, master! (replied 'the sailor) that I will! name but what you would 'have me do; that is, as I said before, you understand me; and I'll do it, though it was to hand the 'main top-gallant sail, in a storm at mid-night, when 'the yard was broke in the slings, and it was not 'my watch; for if it was a man's watch, do you see, 'it would be but his duty, and there is no merit in 'a man's doing his duty: I am no flincher, I never 'say aye when I mean no: though I say it, I am a 'gentleman; my father was lieutenant of a man of 'war, and I have been at sea these five and thirty 'years man and boy, and never was once brought to 'the gang-way in all that time. If the noble captain 'that rated me a midship-man twenty years ago, had 'lived to be an admiral, I should have been an officer 'before now.'

The honest openness of heart that appeared in the sailor's giving his own character, made my master hear him with pleasure, and place an entire confidence in him. As soon as he had finished, therefore, he opened his scheme to him, and the sailor undertook to go to *London*, buy a good ship, and freight her for *Alexandria*,

Alexandria, and to call at *Lisbon* in his way, and take my master and his friends aboard; to do which, he gave him money and jewels to a great amount; the latter he was to dispose of in *London*, and account with the inquisitor for the surplus, after the purchase of the ship and cargo, which were to be his own, in reward for his trouble, as soon as he had made this voyage.

All things being thus settled, the sailor was just departing, when on a sudden thought he turned short on the inquisitor, 'Steady, (said he) steady; so far we go right before the wind, and all's well. But whom do you mean to clap aboard me when I come? if it is the *Pretender*, or the *French* king, here, take back your *trincams*; I'll be damn'd before I'll help either of them to make his escape.' —Never fear, my friend, (replied the inquisitor, scarce able to contain his laughter, at the strangeness of such a thought) I promise you it is neither of these; I promise you not to do any thing against your king or your religion.'——'But shall we not have one dash at this damn'd place? (added the sailor) shall we not set it on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat? I'll bring a gang of jolly boys that would shoot the gulph of hell, to have a stroke at the *Devil Dominic*; shall we not set the inquisition on fire, and cut the inquisitor's throat?'—'We will consider about those things: but you had better lose no time; and let me once more caution you, not to be seen in *Lisbon* at present; and to be as expeditious as possible in your return?'—'Never fear, master; never fear, (replied the sailor); and shaking him heartily by the hand, away he went.'

I here quitted the service of the inquisitor, being among the money which he gave to the sailor.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

The ſailor goes to LONDON, *buys a ſhip, and returns to* LISBON, *where he takes his paſſengers on board. His behaviour on meeting a* FRENCH *ſhip. He lands his paſſengers at* ALEXANDRIA, *returns home and marries.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice.*

MY new maſter no ſooner found himſelf at liberty, than he haſted away to the ſea-ſide, without ever ſtopping to look behind him; and luckily finding the packet juſt ready to ſail, he was out of ſight of *Liſbon* before morning.

Never was an heart ſo intent upon executing a commiſſion faithfully as his; he thought of nothing elſe all the paſſage; and the moment he arrived in *London*, he ſold the jewels, bought a ſhip, manned her well, and, having laid in a proper cargo, ſet ſail for *Liſbon*, and was there before his employer imagined he was arrived in *London*.

I had been an idle ſpectator of theſe tranſactions, for young Aminadab had made ſuch depredations on me, that no one in *London* would accept me at my original value; and my maſter's honour would not think of parting with me for leſs, without acquainting the perſon from whom he had received me.—— The moment he arrived in *Liſbon* he gave notice to his friend, whoſe joy at his fidelity and expedition is not to be expreſſed. He immediately had the treaſures, which he deſigned to take with him, conveyed ſecretly aboard, and as ſoon as the wind ſerved, embarked himſelf with his friends, in the night, and obliged my maſter to ſail directly, though greatly to his diſſatisfaction, becauſe he would not conſent to his firing the priſon of the inquiſition, and *cutting the inquiſitor's throat*.

Heaven

Heaven seemed to approve of the undertaking, sending a fair wind, which soon carried us out of the fear of our enemies.

It is impossible to conceive an happier company than were now together; nor did the blunt festivity of my master add a little to the pleasure of their voyage, which met but one cloud, that seemed at first to threaten a good deal, but soon blew over.

When we were about half our voyage, my master entered the cabin hastily one morning, and, with a kind of fierce delight flashing in his eyes, says to the inquisitor, whom he always called *owner*, 'Well, 'owner, you shall now see what *English* boys can do; 'there is a large *Frenchman* bearing down upon us, 'but if you do not see him sheer off as short as if he 'had got foul of a lee shore, I will never take the 'helm again, if he is not even obliged to drop an- 'chor to bring him up along-side of us; and, as I 'expected some such thing, I took a letter of marque, 'so that you need not fear being hanged for a pirate, 'if the worst should happen.'

But delighted as my master was, his passengers did not seem so well pleased with the news, especially his *owner*, who was not used to fighting, and beside was too anxious for his escape with his fair prize, to think of any thing with pleasure, which could possibly deprive him of her.

They all therefore went directly upon the deck, and seeing the ship really coming toward them, the inquisitor went into the cabin, that he should not be observed by the men, and sending for my master, accosted him thus: 'Surely, my friend, you cannot 'mean to wait for that ship, (for we were *lying to*) 'she certainly means to attack you.'—'And so let her, 'owner, (replied my master); I'll warrant she gets as 'good as she brings.'—'But consider, my friend, 'returned the inquisitor) consider we are on board 'you.'—'Well, *owner*, and what then? you are not 'afraid:

'afraid: the lady may be stowed safe below; and 'you'll stand as good a chance as another; you are not 'afraid.'—'My good friend, I have not time to ex- 'plain my reasons to you; but if you have any re- 'gard for me, you will instantly crowd all the sail you 'can, and get clear of this affair; I desire it; I beg 'it.'—'Why, look you, *owner*, what needs all these 'words? if so be you order us, we must put about 'to be sure, for the ship is yours: but then, the ho- 'nour of *Old England*, consider that; the honour of '*Old England*!'—'O my friend, I can consider no- 'thing but my desire to avoid this danger; so once 'more I beg'——'Enough said, enough said.' Then going upon the deck, 'Well, my lads, our *owner* 'does not choose this brush, while the lady is on 'board; so we must about ship: but as we come 'back, *Soup Maigre* shall pay for it.'—And saying this, he obeyed the desire of his owner as faithfully as if it had been his own, only not with the same ap- pearance of pleasure, not being able to avoid ejaculat- ing, *Damn fear!* at every turn of the tune he whist- led as he walked the deck the rest of that day.

He had so punctually observed his *owner*'s instruc- tions, in getting a good ship, that we were soon out of sight of the *Frenchman*; nor did we meet with any thing disagreeable during the remainder of the voyage.

The day after this affair, when they had all reco- vered their good humour, my master addressed his *owner* thus:—'Now, *owner*, while the sky is clear, 'and we have nothing else to do, I had better give 'you an account of your money. Here is the log- 'book, which you may overhale at your leisure, 'though the sooner the better. This is the time; 'there is no taking a good observation in a storm, as 'may happen by and by; you'll find all as fair as a 'new cable: but I must give you one point to direct 'your reckoning by; and that is this; you bade me

'buy

'buy a ship, and freight her, and so forth, and she
'and the cargo should be my own, after I have done
'your job this trip. Now, *owner*, it is very true,
'that a less vessel than this might have made the
'run; but then you seemed so desirous to be safe,
'that I thought it best to take a bargain in this stout
'ship, which I knew to be as good a sea-boat as ever
'turned to windward, and able to go, hank for
'hank, with any thing that swims the sea, as we
'shewed when we run the *Frenchman* out of sight
yesterday; though it went again my heart to do
'it: but no matter for that now; the ship is yours,
'and you have a right to be obeyed. However,
'there is the accompt, and here is the rest of your
'money, of which I did not lay out one shilling
'that I could avoid, but one guinea, which I gave
'to my old mess-mate *Will Crosstree*, whom I met
'on *Tower-hill* in distress; and one I gave *Black*
'*Moll* of *Wapping* to *heave down*: and I could not
'well avoid those either, for *Will* was an old mess-
'mate, and I owed *Moll* for many a good turn in
'her way: but all this signifies nothing to you;
'they can be stopped in account; and here is a damn-
'ed guinea too, that would not go; I believe it
'has been in the hospital till it was *fluxed* off its
'legs.

'And now, *owner*, as you may think this ship
'cost too much, and that the cargo is too good, I
'will not keep you to your bargain; she is your own
'and all that is in her, only pay the men: as for me,
'I am satisfied with having got out of that damn'd
'inquisition, and leave the rest to yourself. If you
'think that I have deserved any thing, well and
'good; if not, I do not fear bread, while the sea
'flows round *Old England*: all that grieves me is
'that you would not let us set fire to the inquisition,
'and cut the inquisitor's throat.'——If my master's
bluntness in the affair of the *French* ship, gave offence

to his *owner*, the honesty of this speech restored him to his warmest esteem; and made *Pheron*, who was present, cry out in rapture, 'Thank Heaven there is 'still some honesty among mankind.'—'Honesty! 'aye, (replied my master) a little among the tars of 'Old England! a little.'

The inquisitor having by this time recovered from the astonishment, into which such nobleness of soul threw him, returned the accompt unopened, with these words: 'I am convinced your accompt must be 'just; and I freely make you a gift, not of this ship 'and cargo, for they are justly your own already, 'but of the rest of the money which is in your 'hands.'——'What! all, *owner!* all!'—'All, my 'friend: if it were many times so much, you justly 'merit it.'—'But then, *owner*, had not you better 'sign the accompt if you please, for fear of after 'reckonings with your executors? for I hate the 'law damnably, ever since I lost a year's pay for 'hindering our boatswain's mate's brother to beat 'his wife. The brimstone swore I beat her husband, 'and so I paid for meddling; but it was the lawyer's 'fault that set her on: damn all lawyers, say I.'—'Well, then, my honest worthy friend, there is a 'receipt; and I wish you success equal to your 'merit; and you cannot have more.'——'Enough 'said, *owner*; enough said; I thank you; I thank 'you.'

The remainder of our voyage was one continued scene of happiness. My master landed his passengers at *Alexandria*, from whence they soon set out for *Pheron*'s country, and, at his taking leave of them, advised them to be careful how they ventured in any of the ships of those countries, which he assured them were not better than *bum-boats*, nor did their mariners know any more of the sea than a *Thames* water-man.

Having

Having finished this, his first business, he proceeded to dispose of his cargo, for which he met so good a market, and made so profitable a return from thence home, that, as soon as he arrived, his landlady's daughter at *Gosport*, whom he had been in love with for many years, but never dared to speak to till now, readily consented to marry him. One thing though I must not omit, and that was, that he kept a constant *look-out* all the voyage home, for that *Frenchman* whom he had fled from, so sore against his will; and was greatly concerned that he could not meet him, to have one brush for the honour of *Old England*.

I did not remain with him to be a witness of his happiness; he gave me to a Jew pedlar for a pair of fine sleeve-buttons, to present to his mistress the morning before his marriage.

CHAP. XXIV.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* London, *where he comes into the possession of a pawn-broker, by whom he is given to the author. A most unhappy instance of human infirmity. The conclusion.*

THE diminution of my size, which had made my late master careless about me, did not prevent the pedlar, though with many apparent scruples, from giving him a great bargain, worth about a third part of my present value, for me.

I did not remain long in his possession: he passed me off as soon as he arrived in *London*, whither he was going when he received me, to a pawn-broker, at a division of the loss, in the purchase of old clothes, which he was going to carry abroad. —— Strange were the scenes, and unexpected the faces,

which I saw in this place, where every necessary utensil of life, every ornament of luxury, was deposited, as in a place of security, by their respective owners: but your own experience makes any particular description of this place, or its manifold mysterious trade, unnecessary to you.

The misfortune of my size kept me prisoner here till *Saturday* night, when my master always *puts off* his light coin, just before he shuts his shop, to the poor people, whose necessity requiring an immediate supply, for the support of life, cannot wait to return it on *Monday*, and so must even bear the loss.—Such a person did he think you, and accordingly gave *me* to you; but the moment I came into your possession, and found that you were *the chosen of ten thousand, the first born of science*, whom wisdom had instructed, and art led by the hand, through the dark labyrinths of nature, till the coy fugitive, unable longer to elude your pursuit, had been obliged to consent to a revelation of her most *occult wisdom*, and to entrust you with the command of *that chain* which links the animal and material worlds together; the moment, I say, that I perceived who you were, and that I was the *intelligence* appointed to convey this favour to you, I entered your heart with the greatest pleasure, and waited with impatience for the moment when I should confer this completion of human happiness and honour upon you; a pleasure that was heightened by the noble constancy you shewed, when the smell of the hot ox-cheek, as you came by the cook's-shop, raised that conflict between nature and knowledge, whether you should purchase some of it to satisfy your hunger, or preserve me for this last experiment, in which the latter was so gloriously triumphant.

The auspicious moment is arrived: *Nature labours in the throws of the mystic birth; and lo! the philosophic king arises in all the glory of the morning! Attend to*

my

my words; receive the consummation of human knowledge.

To apprehend this secret cause, you must know

* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *
* * * * * * *

O doleful and deplorable event! never to be told without wailing; never to be read without tears! Just as the spirit had arrived at this most interesting point, human weakness, unable to suppress the impulse of internal vapour, which the mention of the fatal ox-cheek set in motion in my empty bowels, by the longing it raised in my stomach, emitted an explosion that filled the room with a fetid steam. The spirit started at the unpardonable offence to his purity; and looking at me with ineffable contempt, indignation and abhorrence, vanished from my sight, without deigning a word more.

The misfortune was more than I could bear; I sunk under its weight, and swooned away upon the floor,* where officious humanity found me, and restored me to a life that was a burden under such a disappointment. The labour of my life being lost, the one moment in a thousand years slipped away in vain. But such is the consequence of human weakness; such the end of all the works, of all the expectations of man.

CONCLUSION.

And now, O my brother in disappointment, who readest this most lamentable catastrophe, whether

* See the Preface.

thou art a taylor, whoſe principal debtor is made a lord; a phyſician, whoſe *noſtrum* is diſcovered; a cobler, who ſleepeſt over thy laſt, in hopes of dreaming of hidden treaſure; a poet, whoſe play is refuſed, or a ſenator, who haſt mortgaged thine eſtate to purchaſe a ſeat in parliament juſt before its diſſolution: attend to the inſtruction in my words, and learn wiſdom from my example. Seize the preſent moment, nor depend upon the future: let reaſon curb expectation; reduce imagination to common ſenſe; and bring your wiſhes within the bounds of your real wants: ſo ſhall induſtry baniſh neceſſity from your habitation, and content turn all your poſſeſſions into gold.

THE END.

550774